

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

## Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

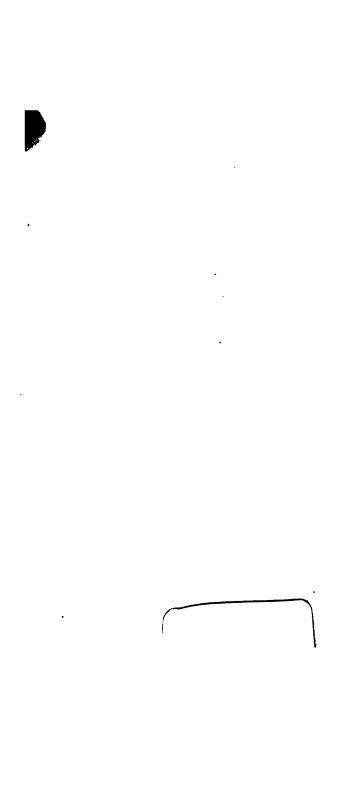
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

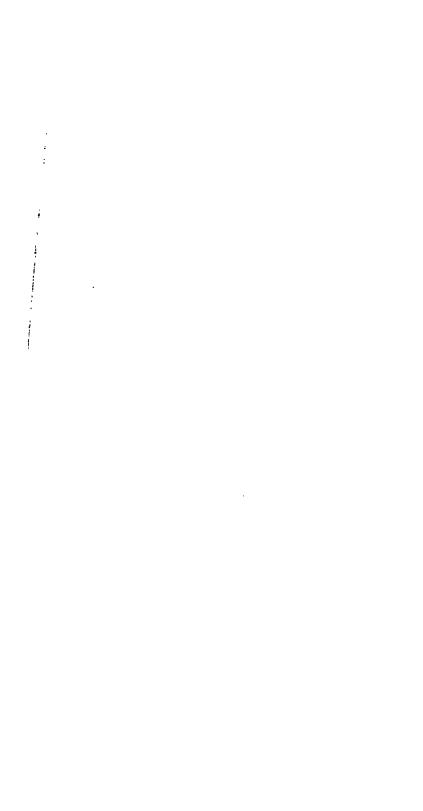
## **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/









# MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE.

II.—SECOND YEAR.

\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$

• .

۳,

•

-

# MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE

# II.-SECOND YEAR

CONTAINING AN ELEMENTARY GRAMMAR, WITH COPIOUS EXERCISES, NOTES, AND VOCABULARIES.

BY

# G. EUGÈNE-FASNACHT

ASSISTANT MASTER IN WESTMINSTER SCHOOL,
EDITOR OF MACMILLAN'S SERIES OF FOREIGN SCHOOL CLASSICS,

A NEW EDITION,
ENLARGED AND THOROUGHLY REVISED.

3000 £ 22.

MACMILLAN AND CO. 1884

[All rights reserved]

000

CHARLES DICKENS AND EVANS, CRYSTAL PALACE PRESS.

## PREFACE

## TO THE NEW REVISED EDITION.

THE fundamental principle underlying the whole Course theory and practice running in parallel lines throughoutand the colloquial character of the Exercises, remain unaltered.

In points of detail, however, the corrections and modifications here introduced are many, all those parts of the Accidence which have not quite successfully stood the crucial test of practical teaching in the Class-room having been thoroughly recast. The characteristic features of the structure of the language are now set forth in such a typographical arrangement as to produce through the eye a clear and lasting impression on the mind of the pupil.\*

As regards the Exercises, the greatest care has been taken to bridge over the gap which, in the opinion of

- \* Compare, for instance:
  - pp. 2-3, the Formation of Tenses.
  - pp. 9-11, the Synoptical Tables of the three Regular Conjugations.
  - pp. 24-43, the New Classification of Irregular Verbs.
  - pp. 44-46, the Treatment of Articles and Nouns.
  - pp. 51-53, the Formation of the Feminine.
  - pp. 57-72, the Treatment of all Classes of Pronouns.
  - pp. 171-177, the Different Renderings of English Prepositions, etc.

### PREFACE.

experienced teachers (an opinion fully borne out by my own experience), rendered the transition from the First to the Second Year's Course one of exceptional difficulty.

But it has not been deemed expedient to depart from the original plan, in accordance with which the use of the different *Voices* and *Moods* is treated immediately after the use of *Tenses*. If the young student is to enter at a comparatively early stage upon a course of *intelligent* reading, and if he is to handle his verbs independently of outward assistance, the sooner he is equipped with at least an elementary knowledge of the working of Reflective Verbs, of the Infinitive and the Subjunctive, the better it will be for the training of his mind.

But in order to enable even very young beginners to grapple with these thorny points of French Grammar, there will be found intercalated in every lesson, under the head of *Drill*, a set of short and easy sentences to be used by way of practice, preparatory to the more elaborate sentences in the Exercises.

Finally, numerous Appendices have been added for the sake of reference, and the Vocabularies have been entirely rewritten, with a view to afford the student every opportunity of improving his phraseology.

March, 1884.

# CONTENTS.

•	THE	VERE	3.					
ION							PAGE	
A. Classification of Ver	bs.				•	•	. I	
B. Formation of Tenses				•	•		. 2-3	
C. Auxiliary Verb, Avo	ir .	•			•		. 4-5	
D. Auxiliary Verb, Etre							. 6–7	
The Four Regular Conju	igation	s:					-	
I. Simple Tenses							8–11	
II. Compound Tens	es .						12-13	
II. Compound Tens III. Interrogative Fo	rm of	Coning	ation	-		-	. 14	
IV. Negative		,		•	-	-	. 14	
V. Interrogative and	l Neos	tive Fo	rm	-	-		. 15	
Peculiarities of Regular	Verbs			•	•	•	16-17	
Comparative Table of T	enses	in Fren	ch an	d Én	olish	•	. 18	
Passive Voice			· ·		P	•	. 19	
Reflective Verbs .	• •	•	•	•	•	•	20-21	
Impersonal Verbs .	• •	•	•	•	•	•	22-23	
Impersonar verbs.		•	•	•	•	•	22-23	
Strong and Irregula	r Ver	bs:						
First Conjugation: aller Second Conjugation:	, s'en	aller, e	nvoye	r.		•	24-25	
(a) Past Part., -i; Pr	éterite.	-is					26- <b>27</b>	
(b) Past Part., -i or -	ert: P	reterite	is				28-29	
(c) Past Part., -u; Pr	reterite	6 or	-us:	and I	Defectiv	ve.		
Verbs in -ir							30-31	
Third Conjugation:		•	•	-	•	•	J- J-	
(a) Past Part., -u; P	reterite	- ns	_		_	_	32-33	
(b) (Contracted Stem)	Past	Part	nu: Pı	reterit	e118		32-33	
(c) Past Part., -is; P	reterit	is.	-,		,	•	34~35	
Fourth Conjugation:		.,	•	•	. •	•	JT JJ	
(a) Verbs in -ndre; I	Past Pa	rt. at:	Prete	erite.	ia)		_	
/ L\ ====== .			11000		-is {	•	36–37	
(c) Traire, vaincre, s	,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,	rina -u,	,	,	~~ ;			
(d) Verbs in -ire; Pa	et Pari	<b>+</b> • 1	Duatau		. l		28-20	
(e) Mettre, prendre,	hattra	., -v, .	LICICI	110, -	٠ (	•	38-39	
(f) Verbs in -aître (-0	itre) ·	Part D		n . p.		~~		
(g) ,, -ire;		T WOL L	مدرس م	-10 1 -10 1	TC/CTI/	در - رد ا	10-42	
		"		-B;	"	_	-0. / 40-	_
(h) ,, -oudre;		31		-a;	"		100	-

## CONTENTS.

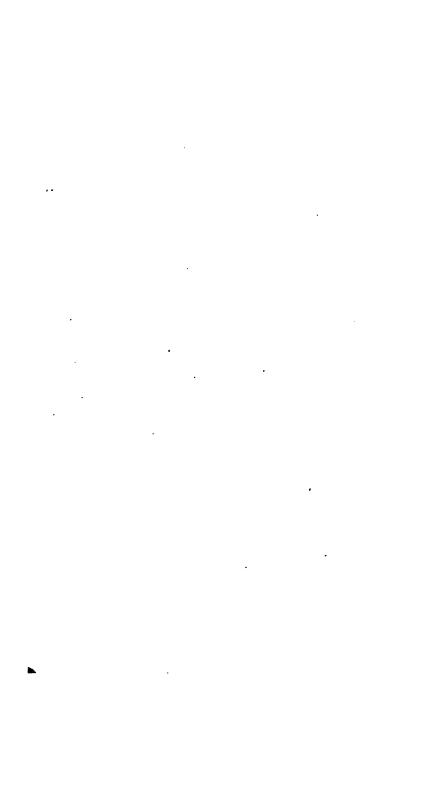
SECTION THE ARTICLE A	ND SU	BSTA	NTIV	E.	PAG	_
<ol> <li>I. Definite; II. Partitive; II</li> <li>IV. Plural of Nouns and A</li> <li>Formation of Compound Subst</li> </ol>	djectives tantives			•	44-4 47-4 48-4	46 48
14. Plural of Compound Substanti	ves .	•		•	• ;	50
THE AL	TECT	VE.				
15. Feminine of Adjectives : Gene	•				_	51
16. Special Bules: (a) Adi. in -e	mute:	(6) Ad	i. in -	E; (c) .	Adi.	<b>,</b> -
<ol> <li>special Rules: (a) Adj. in -e in -f; (d) Adj. in -e; (e</li> </ol>	) Adj. i	n -ier	i, -el,	-eil,	-on;	
(f) Adj. with two forms for	· Masc. ;	(g) A	.dj. in	-eur .	51-	
17. Alphabetical List of Adjective	s .	•	•	•	. • .	53
18. Comparison of Adjectives 19. Numerical Adjectives: I. Ca 20. II. Ordinal 21-24. Fractional, Collective, Pro		•	•	•	•	54
19. Numerical Adjectives: 1. Ca	rainar	•	•	•		55
21-24. Fractional Collective Pro	nortiona	rhA Î.	erhial	•	55-	56
			CI DIMI	•	•	3-
PRON	OUNS.	•				
25. Conjunctive Personal Pronoun	ns .	•			•	57 58
20-27. En, y, and le		•				
28. Le, predicative form			•			<b>59</b>
29. Personal Pronouns used Object 30. Pronoun-Object of a Verb in	tively	٠	•		59-	90
30. Pronoun-Object of a Verb in	lmperati	ve Ath	rmativ	е.	•	60
31. Disjunctive Personal Pronoun		•	•	• •	61-	
32. Euspassive Liollonis	•	•	•	•	62-	
33. Demonstrative Pronouns 34. Interrogative Pronouns	•	•	•	• •	63- •	
		•	•	• •	68-	.70
35. Relative Pronouns	•	•			71-	
Jo	•	•	•	• •	/-	/-
	ERBS.					
37. Adverbs					73-	75
38. Irregular Form of Degrees of	f Compa	rison	of Adj	ectives	and	
Adverbs	•	•	•		•	76
Prepositions Conjunctions	•	•	•		. I	
Conjunctions		•	•		85,	94
<del></del>						
EVET	RCISE					
RECAPITULATION OF THE			& Dec	t. com	navad P/	82
THREE REGULAR CON-	7.			un cha		02
JUGATIONS.	/ /	d'Am	érique	. ,		83
-	8. F	res. Pe	erf. (Pa	ssé Ind		84
<ol> <li>Indicative, Imperative, and Conditional—</li> </ol>				ast An		
	1 7			ondit.		85 86
<ol> <li>Present Indicative</li></ol>	ģ   11. F	uture	and C	ondit.	Perf.	87
		TT.	Subin	notive.	_	-
4. ditto —n'est-ce nas? 8	9   0   12. ]	Present	t Subi	: 1st R	ule .	28
5. Imperfect Indicative 8	1 13.	Imper	fect Su	bj.: 2n	d Rale	à

LE22		LESSON
14.	Perfect and Pluperf. Sub-	50. 4th Conj.: (a) faire, with a
- 4-	junctive: 3rd Rule . 92	
15.	Recapitulation: 4th Rule 93	
16.	,, 5th Rule 94	Phrases . 139
T1		to (c) foire with In
	II. Infinitive & Participles—	
17.	Infinit. without Preposition 95	finit Compl. 140
18.	,, with de 97	
19.		F4 mottre 740
20.	,, with sans, après,	54. ,, mettre 142
	pour, par 99	)   55. ,, prendre, battre 143
21.	instand of Cubiums Too	
	Dantinial December 100	57. ,, croire 146
22.	Participle Present 102 Passive Voice 103	57. ,, croire 146
23.	Passive Voice 103	58. ,, plaire,taire,lire,
24.	IV. Verbs conjugated	boire, etc 147
	with Atma	
	with être 104	
25.	Part. Perfect: Agreement 106	
	Recapitulation 107	, 60. ,, Defective Verbs 149
		61. Shall, will; should, would 149
_	Reflexive Verbs-	I C - D - C T - C
26.	I. Simple Tenses 108	
27.	II. Compound Tenses . 109	, lat verus 150
28.	,, (continued) 110	
	T Townson   Continued   110	of French Verbs IST
29.	V. Impersonal Verbs . 111	\
30.	VI. Orthographical Pecu-	VIII. The Substantive and
•	liarities of Verbs 112	<sub>2</sub>   Adjective—
	_	64. I. Nouns qualified by Def.
	VII. Irregular Verbs—	A mainly " main
31.	1st Conj.: aller, envoyer. 113	Article 152
32.	,, s'en aller . 114	05. Plural of Nouns and Adj. 153
3	2nd Conj.: dormir, mentir,	66. II. Nouns qualified by
33.		Dortitive Article 774
	sortir, etc 115	
34.	,, bouillir, faillir,	67. III. Nouns qualified by
٠.	vêtir, cueillir,	another Noun 155
		- 68-60 Fem and Pluz of Adi vr6
	couvrir . 116	70 Comparison of Adjectives Tr
35.	,, venir 117	
36.	,, tenir 118	71-72. Numerical Adjectives 159
₹.		IX. Pronouns—
37-		no ne Conjunction Demonst
_	courir 119	73-74. Conjunctive Tersonal
38.	3rd Conj.: recevoir, aper-	Pronouns 161
	cevoir, etc 120	75. ditto —en, y, le 163
39.	danair ras	
	,, devoir 121	
40.	,, savoir, pouvoir 123	7   ±0
<b>4</b> I.	,, vouloir 125	78. Demonstrative Pronouns 166
42.	,, falloir 127	
•		
43.	,, falloir (cont.) . 129	
44.	,, valoir, voir, dé-	
	choir 130	X. Particles—
45.	C'000001T T00	
ŦŽ.	,, s asseult 132	2 84. Adverbs of Negation 170
46.	4th Conj.: Verbs in -indre 132	o4. Maverns of Megation
47.	,, ,, -uire 134	Fnalish Preposition's and
48.	two is a seciment	their different render-
	"suivre 13	ings in French
妈	,, dire, rire . 13	6 85. Prepositions
	· -J	. 1

TABLE	OF	OBSERVATIONS,	NOTES,	CAUTIONS,	ETC.
		EMBODIED IN T	HE LESS	ONS.	

LESS	JON :	PAGE
	Verbs requiring a Preposition before their Compl. in English, but not in French	78
3.	Interrogative Pronouns and Adverbs to be placed first in the sentence	79
4.	(1) N'est-ce pas; (2) How to render—I have, I am, etc., in	17
•	answer to a question	80
5.	(1) How to render the English Imperfect: (2) Place of Adverbs	81
8.	(1) Present Perfect used in English for the French Present;	
	(2) When for does not answer to pour	84
9.	When, used relatively, rendered by que instead of quand .	86
10.	The Future in French answers to the English Present after	87
11.	(1) After si, when, Future and Conditional to be avoided;	٠,
	Future Perfect denoting probability; (2) When should and	88
	would answer to the French Conditional	00
12,	(1) Que, in itself, does not require the Subjunctive; (2) Accu-	
	sative + Infinitive not to be used after Verbs of wishing;	٥.
	(3) When should answers to the Subjunctive	89
	* Present Subjunctive also used for Future Subjunctive When may, might answers to the French Subjunctive	91
10.	The verbal form in -ing used substantively = French Infinitive	94
20.	(1) To denoting in order to = French pour;	96
20.	(2) De for dans before an <i>Infinitive</i> -Complement	100
22	The Present Participle in French not to be used substantively.	102
	(a) Only Verbs taking a Direct Object to be used in Passive;	102
-3.	(b) Many take an <i>Indirect</i> Object in French, but a <i>Direct</i> Obj.	
	in English	104
24.	List of Intransitive Verbs conjugated either with avoir or être	
	(1) All Reflexive Verbs conjugated with être in comp. tenses;	5
	(2) Use of Reflexive Verbs in the Infinitive	109
28.	(1) Many Verbs reflexive in French, but not in English;	•
		110
35.	<u></u>	117
	(I) When should answers to devoir;	•
•		122
40.	(1) To know rendered (a) by savoir; (b) by connaître	123
	(2) Can rendered (a) by savoir; (b) by pouvoir	124
		126
	Different forms of Pers. Pronouns, used Objectively, compared	128
		131
		133
	Construction of plaire, croire	147
	Vivre and demeurer compared	148
	How to render—Shall, will; should, would	149
	Plus de and plus que compared	159
70. I	How to render & when not the sign of the Dative	164
77. F	rench Def. Article = English Poss. Pronoun, and vice versa	102
14. 27	epositions not to be placed at the end of the sentence.	16.

	CONTENTS.			· x1
	APPENDIX.			
I.	Principal Rules of Gender: (a) Gender ascertained by Derivation .			PAGE
	(b) Gender ascertained by Meaning .	•	•	179
	(c) Gender ascertained by Termination .	:	:	180
II.	Adjectives affected in their meaning by their po	sition	befor	e
	or after the Noun	•	•	. –
III.	Irregular Formation of the Feminine of Nouns			. 181
	(a) Feminine in -sse	•	•	. –
	(b) Feminine in -eresse .	•	•	
	(c) Feminine in -ice, -ante, -ine, -elle, -e, et	c.	•	. 182
	(d) Feminine formed from a different stem	•	•	. –
IV.	Alphabetical List of Irregular Verbs	•		. 183
v.	Table of French, Latin, and English Suffixes			. 184
	VOCABULARIES.			



# PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE.

## SECOND YEAR.

## § I.—THE VERB (LE VERBE).

## A.—Introductory:

The Classification of French Verbs is on the whole he same as that of English Verbs; thus we distinguish with regard to—

- (A) Meaning-Transitive and Intransitive Verbs;
- (B) Voice—the Active (transitive and intransitive Verbs) and
  Passive (transitive Verbs only);
- (c) Inflections—
  - (a) FINITE FORMS, which may be inflected according to-
    - Moods—the Indicative, the Conditional, the Subjunctive, the Imperative;
    - (2) Tenses—the Present, Past, and Future;
    - (3) Number-the Singular and Plural;
    - (4) Persons—the first, second, and third.
  - (b) INFINITE FORMS, which have no personal inflections:
    - (I) The Infinitive (a Verbal Noun), and
    - (2) The Participles (partly Verbal Adjectives), which can only be inflected like Adjectives.

Verbs in French are divided according to their Infinihive-ending into Four Conjugations; as,

Stem: Infinitive-ending:

Ist Conjugation: Verbs ending in -er, as—DONN -er, to give.

2nd Conjugation: ,, -IR, as—PUN -IR, to punish.

3rd Conjugation: ,, -OIR, as—RECEV-OIR, to receive.

4th Conjugation: ,, -RE, as—VEND-RE, to sell.

The Stem of any Regular Verb is found by cutting off its Infinitive-ending.

## B.—FORMATION

In order fully to conjugate a Verb in French, it is necessary to know—

- (a) Its Principal Parts, which are-
  - Infinitive, (2) Present Participle, (3) Present Indicative,
     Preterite, (5) Past Participle, from which the other Moods and Tenses are derived;

## I.—From the INFINITIVE PRES.

```
1st Conj. donn-er,
2nd Conj. pun-ir,
[3rd Conj. recev-oir,]
4th Conj. vend-re,
```

## are formed-

- (a) the FUTURE PRESENT,\*
  by adding the endings—

  -ai, for the 1st person | 5.
  -as, ,, 2nd person | 7.
  -ons, ,, 1st person | 7.
  -os, ,, 2nd person | 7.
  -os, ,, 3nd person | 7.
  -os, ,, 3nd person | 7.
  -os, ,, 3nd person | 7.
- by adding the endings—

  -ais, for the 1st person
  -ais, ,, 2nd person
  -ait, ,, 3rd person
  -ions, ,, 1st person
  -ies, ,, 2nd person
  -ies, ,, 3rd person
  -ies, ,, 3rd person
  -ies, ,, 3rd person
- In the Third Conj. oi, in the Fourth the final -e of the Infinitive is dropped: recevr-ai, vendr-ai, etc.
- † In the Third Conj. (which consists entirely of irregular Verbs) these rules of derivation are only applicable in the 1st and and person plural of the Present Indicative and Subjunctive, and to the Imperfect Indicative.

## II.—From the PARTICIP. PRES.

```
1st Conj. donn-ant,
2nd Conj. puniss-ant,
[3rd Conj. recev-ant,]†
4th Conj. vend-ant,
```

### are formed-

- (a) the PRES. INDICAT. PLURAL, by changing -ant into—
- (b) the Imperfect Indicative,
  by changing ant into—

  -ais, for the 1st person | Simple ait, | 2nd person | Simple ait, | 3rd person | Simple ait, | 2nd person | 2nd
- (c) the PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE, by changing -ant into— -e, for the 1st person)
  - -e, for the Ist person | 2.00 person | 6.00 person | 6.00

## OF TENSES.

- (b) The Inflections of the derived Tenses, which vary more or less according to the Conjugation to which the Verb belongs;
- (c) Its Auxiliary Verb, which may beavoir or être, for all Compound Tenses of the Active Voice; always être for all Tenses of the Passive Voice, and for all Compound Tenses of Reflexive Verbs.

```
III.—From the PRES. INDICAT.
            donn -e,
 1st Conj.
                       -05, -0;
            donn -ons, -ez, -ent.
2nd Coni.
            pun
                  -is, -is, -it;
```

puniss-ons, -ex, -ent. rec -ois, -ois, -oit; (3rd Conj. rec-evons, -evez, -oivent)

wend .s, 4th Conj. -s, -(t,)\* wend -ons, -ex, -ent, is formed-

the IMPERATIVE.

by dropping the Pers. Prons., as,

Second Pers. Sing.

1st Conj. donn-e,+ 2nd Conj. pun-is, (3rd Conj. rec-ois,) 4th Conj. vend-s;

First Pers. Plural.

1st Conj. donn-ons, 2nd Conj. puniss-ons, (3rd Conj. recev-ons,) vend-ons; 4th Conj.

## Second Pers. Plural.

1st Conj. donn-ez, 2nd Conj. puniss-ez, recev.ex,) (3rd Conj. 4th Conj. vend-ex.

adding

• If the stem does not end in d or t, the inflectional t is not dropped:—il rompt, il lit, etc.

† In the First Conj. the final s is dropped, except before en and y. N.B.—The Pres. Subj. (sing., and 3rd p. pl.) of the Third Conj., as of most irregular Verbs, is formed by cutting off the final at of the 3rd p. pl., and adding

s,

·nt.

IV.—From the PRETERITE IND.

Second Pers. Sing.

donn-as, 1st Conj. 2nd Conj. pun-is, [3rd Conj. reç-us,] 4th Conj. vend-is.

is formed-

the IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE, by changing the s of the 2nd per. sing., into-

-sse, for the 1st person ) -sses, 2nd person 3rd person ,, -^t, ,, -ssions, ,, Ist person and person ard person -ssiez, " -ssent, ,,

V.—From the PARTICIP. PERF.

donn-é, Ist Conj. 2nd Conj. pun-i, [3rd Conj. reç-u,] 4th Conj. vend-u,

are formed-

(a) The Compound Tenses of the Active and Reflexive Voice :— J'ai { donné, puni, j'avais { reçu, vendu. j'aurai, etc.

(b) All Tenses of the Passive Voice :-

Je suis / trompė, econeilli. j'ai été / dégu, bettu. je serai, etc. BS

C.—Auxiliary Verb A	VOIR, to have. I. SIMPLE TENSES.						
INFINITIVE. avoir, to have.	PRESENT.  PARTICIPLE.  ayant, having.						
INDICATIVE. SUBJUNCTIVE.							
Pres	ENT.						
	Principal Clause. Dependent Clause.						
j'ai, I have,	Il faut que j' ai-e,* [ / l have,+						
tu as, thou hast,	tu ai-es, S thou have,						
il a, he has,	", qu' il ai-t, si he have,						
n. av-ons, we have,	,, que n. ay-ons, at we have,						
v. av-ez, you have,	,, v. ay-ez, 3 you have,						
ils ont, they have.	,, qu' ils ai-ent, \approx (they have.						
, Імреі	RFECT.						
i' av-ais, I used to have,							
tu av-ais, you used to have,							
il av-ait, he used to have,							
n. av-ions, we used to have,							
v. av-iez, you used to have,	1						
ils av-aient, they used to have.							
Preti	ERITE. [Commonly called <i>Imperfect Subj.</i> ]  Principal Clause. Dependent Clause.						
j' eu-s, I had,	Il fallait que j' euss-e, [ /I had,						
tu eu-s, thou hadst,	thou hadst						
il eu-t, he had,							
n. eu-mes, we had,	,, que n. euss-ions, g we had, v. euss-iez, g you had,						
v. eû-tes, you had,							
ils eu-rent, they had.	,, qu' ils euss-ent, they had.						
	CONDITIONAL.						
FUTURE PRESENT.	PRESENT.						
j' aur-ai, I shall have,	j' aur-ais, I should have,						
tu aur-as, thou wilt have,	tu aur-ais, thou wouldst have,						
il aur-a, he will have,	il aur-ait, he would have,						
n. aur-ons, we shall have,	n. aur-ions, we should have.						
v. aur-ez, you will have,	v. aur-iez, you would have,						
ils aur-ont, they will have.	ils aur-aient, they would have.						
	MPERATIVE.						
Singular.	Plural.						
ı. — —	ay-ons, let us have,						
2. Ai-e, have (thou	), ay-ez, <i>have</i> (ye),						
3. qu'il ai-t, let him hav							

<sup>&</sup>quot;Or, j'aye, tu ayes; ils ayent. † Or, I must have, etc.

## Avoir. II. COMPOUND TENSES.

## INFINITIVE.

avoir eu, to have had.

## PERFECT.

PARTICIPLE. had. eu. ayant eu, having had.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT PERFECT.

j' ai eu, I have had, tu as ou, thou hast had, il a eu, he has had, n. avons eu, we have had, v. aver eu, you have had ils ont eu, they have had.

#### Principal Clause. Dependent Clause. aie eu, I have had, Il regrette que (qu') tu aies eu, thou hast had, he has had, il ait eu, n. ayons eu, we have had, v. ayez eu, ils aient eu, you have had.

they have had.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

## Ist PAST PERFECT (Plusqueparfait).

j' avais eu, I had had, tu avais eu, thou hadst had, il avait eu, he had had, n. avions eu, we had had, v. aviez eu, you had had, ils avaient ou, they had had.

2nd Past Perfect (Antérieur). [Commonly called *Pluperfect* Subj.]

j' eus eu, I had had. tu eus eu, thou hadst had, il out ou, he had had, n. eumes eu, we had had, v. eutes eu, you had had, ils curent ou, they had had,

#### Dependent Clause. Principal Clause. eusse eu, 'I had had. tu eusses eu, il eût eu, n. eussions e thou hadst had, he had had, n. eussions eu, we had had, you had had. v. eussiez eu, ils eussent eu, they had had.

## FUTURE PERFECT.

j' aurai eu, I shall have had,

## CONDITIONAL.

## PERFECT.

j' aurais eu, I should have had, tu auras eu, thou wilt have had, in aurais eu, thou wouldst have had, il aurait eu, he would have had, n. aurons on, we shall have had, n. aurions on, we should have had v. sures ou, you will have had, v. surious ou, we should have had, ils surout ou, they will have had. ils suraient ou, they would have had.

## D.—Auxiliary Verb ÉTRE, to be. I. SIMPLE TENSES.

#### PRESENT. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE. être, *to be*. étant, being. INDICATIVE. SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT. Principal Clause. Dependent Clause. I be, je suis, I am, Il faut que je soi-s, tu es, thou art, tu **soi-s**, thou be. il est, he is, qu' il soi-t, he be, n. sommes, we are, que n. soy-ons, we be. ,, v. êtes, you are, v. soy-ez, qu'ils soi-ent, you be, ,, ils sont. they are. they be. IMPERFECT. i' é**t-ais,** I used to be, tu ét-ais, thou wast wont to be, il ét-ait, he used to be, n. ét-ions, we used to be, v. ét-iez, you used to be, ils ét-aient, they used to be. PRETERITE. [Commonly called Imperf. Subj.] Principal Clause. Dependent Clause Il fallait que je fuss-e, I were, je fu-s, I was, tu fu-s, thou wast, tu fuss-es, thou wert, il fu-t, he was, qu' il lut, que n. fuss-ions, & & qu' il fût, he were, ,, n. fû-mes, we were, we were, ,, v. fû-tes, you were, v. fuss-iez, you were. . . ils fu-rent. they were. qu' ils fuss-ent, 岑 they were. ,, CONDITIONAL. FUTURE PRESENT. PRESENT. I shall be, I should be, je ser-ai, je ser-ais, tu **ser-as,** thou wilt be, tu ser-ais, thou wouldst be. he will be, il ser-ait. he would be. il ser-a, n. ser-ons, we shall be, n. ser-ions, we should be, you will be, v. ser-iez, you would be. v. ser-ez, ils ser-ont, they will be. ils ser-aient, they would be. IMPERATIVE.

2. Bois, be (thou), 3. qu'il soit, let him be. Qu'ils soi-ent, let us de,

Etre. II. COMPOUND TENSES. (Formed like those of Avoir, p. 5.)

## PERFECT.

## INFINITIVE.

avoir été, to have been.

## PARTICIPLE.

été, been. ayant été, having been.

## INDICATIVE.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT PERFECT.

j' ai été, I have been, tu as été, thou hast been, il a été, he has been, n. avons été, we have been, v. avez été, you have been, ils ont été, they have been.

(i' **ai**e été, tu aies été, il ait été, n. ayons été, v. ayez été, ils **aient été,** 

(I have been, thou hast been, he has been, we have been, you have been, they have been.

## IST PAST PERFECT (Plusqueparfait).

j' avais été, I had been, tu avais été, thou hadst been, il avait été, he had been, n. avions été, we had been, v. aviez été, you had been, ils avaient été, they had been.

## (Antérieur.) 2nd PAST PERFECT. (Plupf. Subj.)

j' eus été, I had been, tu eus été, thou hadst been, il eut été, he had been, n. eumes été, we had been, v. ettes été, you had been, ils eurent été, they had been.

j' eusse été, tu eusses été, ils eussent été,

(I had been, thou hadst been, tu cusses ete, p thou hads then he had been, v. cussics été, b pou had been, v. cussics été, b pou had been, they had been.

## FUTURE PERFECT.

i' aurai été, I shall have been,

# CONDITIONAL.

## PERFECT.

j' aurais été, I should have been, tu auras été, thou will have been, il aura été, he will have been, n. aurons été, we shall have been, v. aurons été, you will have been, ils aurait été, thou would have been, n. aurions été, we should have been, ils aurait été, they would have been ils auraitent été, they would he t

## § 2.—The Four

## I. SIMPLE TENSES.

FIRST CONJUGATION.	SECOND (	CONJUGATION.
INFIN	ITIVE.	
(I.) Pres. donn-er to give.	pun-ir	to punish.
PARTIC	CIPLE.	
(II.) Pres. donn-ant giving.		ant punishing.
Perf. donn-6 given.	pun-i	punished.
INDICA	ATIVE.	
Presi	ENT.	
(III.) I give, I am giving, etc.		un punishing, etc.
je donn-e	je	pun-is
tu <b>donn-es</b>	tu	pun-is
il (elle) donn-e	il (elle)	pun-it
nous donn-ons	nous	pun <b>-iss-ons</b>
U / vous donn-ez	vous	pun-iss-ez
rous donn-ons vous donn-ex ils (elles) donn-ent  I was giving, etc. je donn-ais tu donn-ais il (elle) donn-ait nous donn-ions vous donn-iez ils (elles) donn-aient	ils (elles)	pun-iss-ent
IMPER:	FECT.	
I was giving, etc.	I was p	unishing, etc.
₹ je donn-ais	je •	pun-iss-ais
tu donn-ais	tu	pun-iss-ais
il (elle) donn-ait	il	pun-iss-ait
nous donn-ions	nous	pun-iss-ions
§ \ vous donn-iez	vous	pun-iss-iez
ils (elles) donn-aient	ils	pun-iss-aient
Prete	RITE.	
(IV.) I gave, etc.	I pun	ished, etc.
je donn-ai	je ¯	pun <b>-is</b>
tu donn-as	tu	pun-is
il (elle) donn-&	il	pun-it
nous donn-âmes	nous	pun-îmes
vous donn-âtes	vous	pun-îtes
ils (elles) donn-èrent	ils	pun-irent
Future 1	Present.	
I shall give, etc.	I shall	punish, etc.
; je donner-ai	je	punir <b>-ai</b>
tu donner-as	tu	punir-88
il donner-a nous donner-ons yous donner-es	il	punir-8
nous donner-ons	nous	punir <b>-ons</b>
je donner-ai tu donner-as il donner-as il donner-as inous donner-ons vous donner-ons donner-ont	vous	punir-ez
(ils donner-ont	ils	punir-ont

<sup>\*</sup>All Verbs of the Third are strictly speaking irregular in their Tense-formations; conjugated alike is inserted.

Conjugations. (The 1st, 2nd, and 4th regular; the 3rd irregular.\*)

## I. SIMPLE TENSES.

THIRD CON	JUGATION.	FOURTH	CONJUGATION
	INFIN	ITIVE.	
recev-oir		vend-re	to sell.
			7, 7,111)
	PARTIC	CIPLE.	
100-0V-an		vend-a	
re-çu	received.	▼end-u	sold.
	INDICA	TIVE.	
	Presi		
receive, I am	receiving, etc.		am selling, etc.
je r	Q-01-8	je	vend-s
tu r		tu	vend-s
	ę́-oi-t	il	vend
	:Ć-0∀-0 <b>ns</b>	nous	vend <b>-ons</b>
	C-64-62	vous	vend-ez
ils (elles) re	ç-oiv-ent	ils	vend-ent
	IMPER	FECT.	
I was rece	wing, etc.	I was	selling, etc.
	cev-ais	je	vend-ais
	cev-ais	tu	vend-ais
	cev-ait	il	vend-ait
	cev-ions	nous	vend-ions
	cev-iez	<b>▼ous</b>	vend-ies
ils r	cev-aient	ils	vend-aient
	PRETE	RITE.	
I receiv		I	<i>sold</i> , etc.
	ç-us	je	vend-is
	ç-us	tu	vend-is
il r	-ç-ut	il	vend-it
nous re	c-umes	nous	vend-îmes
vous re	c-urent	vous	vend-îtes
113 10	<u> </u>	ils	vend-irent
	FUTURE 1	PRESENT.	
I shall re	reive, etc.	I sho	zll sell, etc.
•	cevr-ai	je	vendr-ai
• •	ccevr-as	tu	vendr-as
	cevr-&	il	<b>ve</b> ndr <b>-a</b>
	cevr-ons	nous	vendr-ons
	ccevr-ex	<b>sons</b>	AGDG1-98
712 LG	cevr-ont	eli	AGDG1-017£

but for the sake of completeness and symmetry, one representative of the seven Vertical its usual place.

## The Four Conjugation

FIRST CONJUGATION.	SECOND CONJUGATION.
CONDI	rional.
Pre	SENT.
g I should give, etc.	I should punish, etc.
je donner-ais tu donner-ais il donner-ait nous donner-ions vous donner-ies ils donner-aint	je punir-ais
tu donner-ais	tu punir-ais
ggjil donner-ait	il punir-ait
il donner-sit nous donner-ions	nous punir-ions
vous donner-iez	vous punir-iez
donner-aient	ils punir-aient
SE ( IMPE	RATIVE.
~ <b></b> 1	
donn-e, give (thou),	pun-is, punish (thou pun-iss-ons, let us punish
donn-ez, give (ye).	pun-iss-ons, tet us punish (ye).
	P
SUBJU	NCTIVE.
Pre	SENT.
It is po	ssible that
I may give, etc.	I may punish, etc.
Il est po	ssible que
ric (je donn-e	je pun-iss-e
tu donn-es	tu pun-iss-es
tu donn-es il donn-e il donn-e nous donn-ies vous donn-ies ils donn-ent	il pun-iss-e
S nous donn-ions	nous pun-iss-ions
vous donn-ies	vous pun-iss-ies
is donn-ent	ils pun-iss-ent
IMPE	RFECT.
	possible that
I might give, etc.	I might punish, etc.
Il était p	ossible que
Ç∕je donn-a-sse	je pun-i-sse
tu donn-a-sses	tu pun-i-sses
il donn-â-t	il pun-î-t
f nous donn-a-ssions	nous pun-i-ssions
Vous donn-a-asiez	vous pun-i-ssies ile pun-i-ssies

# I .- SIMPLE TENSES (continued).

THIRD CONJUGATION.	FOURTH CONJUGATION
CONI	DITIONAL.
PR	RESENT.
I should receive, etc.	I should sell, etc.
je recevr-ais	je vendr <b>-ais</b>
tu recevr-ais	tu vendr-ais
il recevr-ait	il vendr-ait
nous recevr-ions	nous vendr-ions
vous recevr-iez	vous vendr-ies
ils recevr-aient	ils vendr <b>-aient</b>
TMCP	ERATIVE.
reç-01-s, receive (thou),	vend-s, sell (thou),
rec-ev-ons, let us receive,	vend-ons, let us sell,
rec-ev-es, receive (ye).	vend-ex, sell (ye).
SUBJ	UNCTIVE.
Pi	RESENT.
It is j	possible that
I may receive, etc.	I may sell, etc.
•	possible que
je reç-oiv-e	je vend-e
tu rec-oiv-es	tu vend-es
il rec-oiv-e	il vend-e
nous rec-ev-ions	nous vend-ions
vous rec-ev-iez	vous vend-ies
ils reç-oiv-ent	ils vend-ent
Imi	PERFECT.
It was	possible that
I might receive, etc.	I might sell, etc.
Il était	possible que
	je vend-i-sse
je reç <b>-u-sse</b>	tu vend-i-8808
je reç-u- <b>sse</b> tu reç-u- <b>sses</b>	
tu reç-u-sses il reç-û-t	il vend-1-t
tu rec-u-sses il rec-u-ssions	il vend-1-t
tu reç-u-sses il reç-û-t	il vend-1-t

C 2

# II. Compound Tenses: (a) With the Auxiliary Verb avoir.

	INFINITIV	E PERFECT		
To have	given,	punished,	received,	sold.
Avoir	donné,	puni,	recu,	vendu.
	PARTICIP	LE PERFECT	r	
Having	given,	punished,		sold.
Ayant	donné,	puni,	reçu,	vendu.
	<del></del>	<del></del>		
Dana		CATIVE.	JIC 5	
	ENT PERFE			••
<i>I have</i> i' <b>ai</b>	given,	punished,	received,	sold, etc.
j' <b>ai</b> tu <b>as</b>	<i>)</i>			
( il (on) &	donné,	puni,	reç <b>u</b> ,	vend <b>u.</b>
elle &	)			
nous avons	<b>S</b>			
vous avez	donné.	nuni	<b>200</b>	vendu.
ils ont	( donne,	puni,	reçu,	vendu.
elles ont				
FIRST	PAST PERF	ECT (Plusqu	eparfait).	
I had	given,	punished,	received,	sold, etc.
j' avais	donné,	puni,	reçu,	vendu.
nous avions	) 1	• '	_	· -
SECOND	PAST PERI	ECT (Passé	Antérieur).	
j' eus	donné.	puni,	· recu.	vendu.
nous etimes	<u> </u>			
FUTURE PERFECT	(Futur Pas	ssé) AND Co nnel Passé).	NDITIONAL	. Perfect
I shall have	given,		received,	sold, etc.
i' aurai	٠,٠	-	•	•
nous aurons	donné,	pun <b>i,</b>	reç <b>u</b> ,	vend <b>u.</b>
I should have	given,	punished,	received,	sold, etc.
j' aurais	donné.	puni,	recu,	vendu.
nous aurions	, donne,	punz,	reçu,	vendu.
	SUBJU	INCTIVE.		
		PERFECT.		
He is glad that—				
I have	given,	punished,	received,	sold, etc.
Il est bien aise que-			Ţ.	•
j'aie	donné,	puni,	reçu,	vendu.
nous ayons	)	•		
77	Past	Perfect.		
He was glad that—  I had		A		44.4
I had Il était bien aise que-	given,	punisnea,	receivea,	sold, etc.
, ciali bien aise que— <b>eusse</b>	-,			
us sussions	{ donné,	puni,	zečar*	Acoqar"
	,	-		

## II. Compound Tenses: (b) With the Auxiliary Verb être.

Most Intransitive Verbs denoting Motion from one place to another, or Transition from a state into another, are conjugated in their Compound Tenses with the Auxiliary Verb être; as, aller, to go. arriver, to arrive. décéder, to die. sortir, to go out. retourner, to enter, to enter, to enter, to table, to blow.

INFINITIVE PERFECT. To have gone out. arrived, come down, Etre arrivé. sorti, descendu. PARTICIPLE PERFECT. arrived, gone out, Having come down. Étant arrivé, sorti. descendu. INDICATIVE. PRESENT PERFECT (Passé Indéfini). arrived, come down, etc. have gone out, arrivé (ée), arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), suis descendu (ue). jе sorti (ie), tu 68 descendu (ue). sorti, il (on) est arrivé, descendu. est arrivée, sortie, descendue. elle ( arrivés (ées), sortis (ies), descendus (ues). nous sommes sortis (ies), arrivés (ées), vous êtes descendus (ues). arrivés. sortis, descendus. lils sont elles sont arrivées, sorties. descendues. FIRST PAST PERFECT (Plusqueparfait). come down, etc. had arrived, gone out, étais arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), descendu (ue). nous étions arrivés (ées), sortis (ies), descendus (ues). PERFECT (Passé Antérieur). SECOND PAST fus arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), descendu (ue). je arrivés (ées), nous fûmes sortis (ies), descendus (ues). FUTURE PERFECT (Futur Passé) AND CONDITIONAL PERFECT (Conditionnel Passé). gone out, come down, etc. shall have arrived. descendu (ue). je serai arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), descendus (ues). arrivés (ées), sortis (ies), nous serons come down, etc. I should have arrived, gone out, descendu (ue). je SATRIS arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), serions arrivés (ées), sortis (ies), descendus (ues). nous SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT PERFECT (Parfait). He is glad that come down, etc. gone out, have arrived. Il est bien aise quedescendu (ue). arrivé (ée), sorti (ie), je sois descendus (ues). nous soyons arrivés (ées), sortia (iea), PAST PERFECT (Plusqueparfait). He was glad thatcome down. had arrived, gone out, II était bien aise que descenda (ae). frees .......... ------

## III. Interrogative Form of Conjugation.

[§ 2.

(1) Simple Interrogation, viz. without Interrogative Pronoun or Adverb:

```
(a) The Subject a Personal Pronoun:
```

```
Do I speak (am I speaking)? etc.

Parlé-je?* or Est-ce que je parle?

Parles-tu? Est-ce que tu parles?

Parle-t-il [on]? Est-ce qu'il (on) parle?

Parlons-nous? Est-ce qu'elle parle?

Parles-vous? Est-ce que nous parlons?

Parles-vous? Est-ce que vous parlez?

Parlent-ils (elles)? Est-ce qu'ils (elles) parlent?
```

In Compound Tenses:

Ai-je parlé? or Est-ce que j'ai parlé? Have I spoken? etc.

(b) The Subject a Noun:

L'orateur parle-t-il ? or, Est-ce que l'orateur parle? Does the orator speak?

La bonne parle-t-elle ? or, Est-ce que la bonne parle? Does the servant speak?

Les orateurs parlent-ils ? or, Est-ce que les orateurs parlent? Does the servant orators speak?

Les bonnes parlent-elles ? or, Est-ce que les bonnes parlent? Do the servants speak?

In like manner with Verbs of any other Conjugation, as,

```
Finis-tu (or, Est-ce que tu finis)?

Vendez-vous (or, Est-ce que vous vendez)?

A-t-il (or, Est-ce qu'il a) bien dormi?

Sont-ils (or, Est-ce qu'ils sont) allés?

Are they gone?
```

(2) For Relative Interrogation, viz. introduced by an Interrogative Pronoun or Adverb, see Ex. 3, A.

## IV. Negative Form of Conjugation.

Je Tu	ne parle pas.	I do not speak (I am not speaking).		
Tu	ne parles pas.	Thou	dost not speak.	
(Il (elle)	ne parle pas.	He (she)	does not speak.	
Louis	ne parle pas.	Louis	is not speaking.	
Nous	ne parlons pas.	We '	do not speak.	
<b>Vous</b>	ne parlez pas.	You	do not speak.	
( Ils (elles)	ne parlent pas.	They	do not speak.	
Ces élèves	ne parlent pas.	These pup	ils do not speak.	

<sup>\*</sup> To avoid the unpleasant sound of two mute syllables following each other, the final e mute of the verb is pronounced acute, and this is indicated in print or writing by an acute accent. If the 1st person singular is a monosyllable, the interrog, form, Est-ce que je . . . is preferred for the sake of euphony: Est-ce que je prends? etc. Except: ai-je? suis-je? dis-je? dois-je? puis-je? sais-je? vais-je? vois-je? which have been sanctioned by usage.

In like manner with-

Te no demande personne.

(a) the 2nd Conj.:—Je ne finis pas.

Nous ne finissons pas, etc.

Nous ne réponds pas.

Nous ne répondons pas.

Nous ne répondons pas.

Nous ne répondons pas.

Nous ne répondons pas. We do not réply, etc. (c) Aux. Verbs:—Je n'ai pas mon couteau. I have not my knife. Je ne suis pas indisposé. I am not unwell.

In French a Verb is made negative in meaning by placing the particle 'ne' before that verb; in most cases this 'ne,' which is the real negation, must be supplemented by some Adverb or Noun to indicate the manner or degree in which the action expressed by that verb is negatived: as,

Cet élève-ci ne travaille pas. This pupil is not working. (ne . . . pas is the most common form of negation); Cet élève-là ne travaille point. That pupil does not work (at all). Votre élève ne travaille plus. Your pupil works no more (no longer), i.e. does not work now. Le vôtre ne travaille pas non plus. Yours does not work either. Vous ne travaillez guère. You hardly ever work. Ce fainéant ne travaille jamais. This idler never works. She works only (but) rarely. Elle ne travaille que rarement. I ask for nothing. Je no demande rien. I do not ask for anything. I ask for nobody (no one).

Observation 1.— Rien and personne, in accordance with their original substantival nature, may stand as the Subject of a Verb; as,

I do not ask for anybody (any one).

Rien ne décourage l'homme persévérant.

Nothing daunts a persevering man.

Personne ne travaille ici.

Nobody (no one) is working here.

Observation 2.—Infinitive :- Ne pas parler (finir, etc.) Not to speak (finish, etc.)

## V. Interrogative and Negative Form.

Ne parlé-je pas ? or, Est-ce que je ne parle pas ? Am I not speaking?
Ne parles-tu pas ? or, Est-ce que tu ne parles pas ? Art thou not speaking?
Ne parle-t-elle jamais ? Is he no longer speaking?
Ne parlons-nous pas ? Don's twe speak?
Ne parlez-vous point ? Don't you speak?
Ne parlent-ils plus ? Are they not speaking now?

The interrogative form is made negative by placing no before, and pas or point, plus, jamais, etc. after, the interrogative form of the Verb: as,

L'orateur ne parle-t-il pas bien?

One not the orator speak

or, Est-ce que l'orateur ne parle pas bien?

Pourquoi les élèves ne répondent-ils pas i Why do the pupils not repl.

## § 3.—Peculiarities of Regular Verbs.

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

In order to avoid the unpleasant sound of two mute syllables following close upon one another, the stem of a Verb with an 6 mute in the last syllable but one is strengthened whenever in the course of conjugation the following syllable becomes mute; this strengthening of the stem in pronunciation is indicated in writing or printing, either—

(a) by doubling the final stem-consonant 1;\*

16

(a) appel-er,

to call.

(b) by doubling the final stem-consonant t;

(b) jet-er,

- or (c) by changing the e mute into è (e grave), if the final stem-consonant is not 1 or t, as above;
  - (d) by changing, in Verbs with an  $\hat{\mathbf{e}}$  in the last syllable but one, this  $\hat{\mathbf{e}}$  into  $\hat{\mathbf{e}}$  (except in the Future and Conditional), to indicate that the sound of  $\hat{\mathbf{e}}$  becomes long and open (ouvert); as,

(c) men-er,

to lead.

(d) espér-er,

to hope.

Present Indicative and Subjunctive.					
il appell-e n. appel-ons, -ions v. appel-ez, -iez	tu jett-es il jett-e n. jet-ons,-ions v. jet-ez, -iez	tu men-es il men-e n. men-ons,-ions v. men-ez, -iez	j' espèr-e tu espèr-es il espèr-e n. espér-ons, -ions v. espér-ez, -iez ils espèr-ent		

# Thus also the Imperative:

appell-e	jett-e	men-e	esper-e
appel-ons, -ez	jet-ons, -ez	men-ons, -ez	espér-ons, -ez

## Future and Conditional,

j'appell-erai, etc. | je jett-erai, etc. | je men-erai, etc. | j'espérer-ai, etc. | j'appell-erais, etc. | je jett-erais, etc. | je men-erais, etc. | j'espérer-ais, etc.

Acheter, to buy; becqueter, to peck; colleter, to collar; crocheter, to hook; épousseter, to dust; étiqueter, to label (and their compounds),—

all these, instead of doubling the consonant, change e into è; see (c): as—

I hide, etc.

is chia.

	a /mm) ccc.	2 025, 000		
je cèl-e, tu cèl-es,	n. cel-ons,	j' achèt-e,	n. achet-ons,	
il cel-es,	v. cel-ez, ils cèl-ent.	tu achèt-es, il achèt-e,	v. achet-ez, ils achet-ent.	

<sup>\*</sup> Except—Celer, to hide; geler, to freeze; bourreler, to torture (fig.); demanteler, to dismantle; écarteler, to quarter; harceler, to harass; marteler, to hammer; modeler, to fashion; peler, to peal;

- (e) Verbs in -ayer, -eyer, -uyer, change the y into i whenever the inflection becomes *mute*. Those in -ayer and -eyer, however, may retain y throughout:—je paie, or paye; je paierai (pairai) or payerai, etc.
- (f) Verbs in ·ier are regular throughout, and are only mentioned here to show the working of the Imperfect Plural; notice also cré-er; je cré-e, P. P. cré-é, f. cré-ée, etc.
- (g) Verbs in -ger insert an e between the stem and the inflection when the latter begins with a or 0, to indicate that g retains throughout the whole conjugation the soft sound which it always has before e or i.
- (h) Verbs in -cer change the c into q whenever the inflection begins with a or o; to indicate that c retains throughout the whole conjugation the same sound of s which it always has before c or i; as,

(e) ploy-er, to fold.	(f) pri-er, to pray.	(g) chang-er, to change.	(h) plac-er, to place.	
Pres. Indica	ıt. and Subj.	Pres. Indicat.		
je ploi-e tu ploi-es il ploi-e n. ploy-ons, -ions v. ploy-ez, -iez ils ploi-ent.	tu pri-es il pri-e n. pri-ons, -ions v. pri-ez, -iez ils pri-ent.	v. chang-ez v. plac-ez ils plac-ent.		
	ils pri-ent.			

Future.	Imperfect Indicative.			
n. ploier-ons, etc.	v. pri-iez		n. plac-ions v. plac-iez	

(Thus also the *Preterite Indic.* and Subj.)

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

fleurir (to bloom) in the sense of to flourish, PRES. PART.: florissant.

to prosper, has:— IMPERF.: je florissais, etc.
which are the remnants of the old French verb "florir."

bénir, to bless, to consecrate, has two forms \ béni, -e, blessed. for the PAST PART.:— \ bénit, -e, consecrated.

The former, as a rule, applies to persons only; as, Un peuple béni de Dieu. The latter, to things only; as, pain bénit; eau bénite.

'haïr, to hate, in the Singular of PRES. INDIC. and IMPERATIVE has i instead of i, and is then pronounced one syllable: as,

Je hais, tu hais, il hait; but Plural—nous haïssons, etc.

ENGLISH	
AND	
FRENCH	•
Z	
TENSES	
O.F	
TABLE	
. COMPARATIVE	
٩	

18		VERBS: TENSES.				[§
JSH	Perfect and Continuous.	I have been receiving	j'ai reçu.	I had been receiving j'avais rogu.	I shall have received   I shall have been receiving j'surai rogu.	N.B.—The above table shows that (with the exception of the Part) French, as compared with English, is defective, since it has no special tense to express incomplete or continuous action in the Present and Future; thus, in french the  PRESENT—jo rogolo, means I do receive, I am receiving, as well as I receive;
IN FRENCH AND ENGL	Perfect (Complete).	I have received	ja'i	I had received j'ous rogu.	I shall have received j'surai	the Past French, as c tinuous action in the Preceiving, as well as I rece
§ 4.—A COMPARATIVE TABLE OF TENSES IN FRENCH AND ENGLISH.	Imperfect (Incomplete) or Continuous.	I am recetving	çois.	I was receiving, Iused (was wont) to receive je recevais.	I shall be receiving	thove table shows that (with the exception of the Part) French, as comphas no special tense to express incomplete or continuous action in the Present PRESENT—je regols, means I do receive, I am receiving, as well as I receive;
\$ 4.—A COMPARA	Simple or Indefinite.	I receive, I do receive	je reçois.	I received, I did receive jo rogus.	I shall receive I s	above table shows that it has no special tense to PRESENT—je reçois, n
		PRESENT	<del></del>	PAST · · ·	FUTURE .	N.B.—The defective, since French the

I shall receive. 2 FUTURE -je recovrai, ,, I shall be receiving, INFINITIVE.

être honoré,\* to be honoured.

avoir été honoré,\* to have been

## § 5.—The Passive Voice.

The Passive Voice is formed by means of the Auxiliary Verb être and the PART. PERF. of the Verb to be conjugated.

PRESENT.

PERFECT.

This PART. PERF. must agree in Gender and Number with its Subject.

PARTICIPLE.

étant honoré, \* being honoured.

ayant été honoré, \* having been

#### honoured. honoured. INDICATIVE. SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT. honoured, etc. honoré (-ée). be honoured, etc. honoré (-ée). anı je suis je sois honoré (-ée). honoré (-ée). tu es tu sois il est honoré. il soit honoré. elle est honorée. elle soit honorée. nous sommes honorés (-ées). nous soyons honorés (-ées). vous êtes vous soyez honorés (-ées). honorés (-ées). sont soient honorés. ils honorés. ils elles sont honorées. elles soient honorées. AND IMPERFECT. PRETERITE honoured, etc. (In order that) was étais and ( je honoré (-ée), etc. I might be honoured, etc. nous étions honorés (-ées), etc. fusse honoré (-ée), etc. fus honoré (-ée), etc. jе nous fûmes honorés (-ées), etc. d ( nous fussions honorés (-ées), etc. PERFECT AND ANTERIOR PLUPERFECT. I have (had) been honoured, etc. (In order that) [ed, etc. 'ai été honoré (-ée), etc. g (j' aie été I may (might) have been honourj'avais été honoré (-ée), etc. honoré (-ée), etc. j'eus été honoré (-ée), etc. eusse été honoré (-ée), etc. FUTURE PRESENT. CONDITIONAL. PRESENT.

## IMPERATIVE.

je

serais

nous serions

shall be honoured, etc.

FUTURE PERFECT.

I shall have been honoured, etc.

nous aurons été honorés (-ées).

aurai été honoré (-ée).

nous serons honorés (-ées).

honoré (-ée).

ie

serai

sois honoré (-ée), be (thou) soyons honorés (-ées), let us be honoured.

honoured. [honoured. soyes honorés (-ées), be (ye) honoured. qu'il soit honoré, let him be qu'ils soient honorés, let them be honoured.

I should be honoured, if etc.

PERFECT.

I should have been honoured, if etc.

aurais été honoré (-ée).

nous aurions été honorés (-ées).

honoré (-ée), si...

honorés (-ées), si...

<sup>\*</sup> f. honorée; plur. m. honorés, plur. f. honorées.

#### § 6.—Reflexive Verbs.

#### Reflexive Verbs are of two kinds:-

(a) Exclusively Reflexive: -se repentir, to repent;

(b) Occasionally Reflexive:—se sentir, to feel one's s. lf.
Many of these are not used reflexively in English:—se facher, to get angry; so promener, to take a walk, etc.

I .- SIMPLE TENSES.

INDICATIVE.  PRESENT.  BUBJUNCTIVE.  je me lave, I wash myself. tu to laves, thou washest thyself. til se lave, he washes himself. on se lave, one washes one's self. nous nous lavons, we wash ourselves. vous vous laver, they wash themselves.	se la		INFINIT to wash o		PRESENT.		PART t, was		. <b>E.</b> one's self.
tu to laves, thou washest thyself. il so lave, he washes himself. elle so lave, one washes herself. on so lavon, we washe ourselves. vous vous lavons, you wash yourselves. ils so lavent, they wash themselves. ils so lavent,			INDIC						
	tu il elle on nous vous ils	te se se nous vous	laves, lave, lave, lave, lavons, lavez, lavent,	thou wa he wash she wash one wash we wash you was	shest thyself, es himself, hes herself, hes one's self, ourselves, h yourselves,	wishes désire	tu il elle on nous vous ils	te se se nous vous	lave, lave, lave, lave, lavions, laviez,

### INTERROGATIVE.

#### NEGATIVE.

	INDICATIV	E PR	ESE	NT.		
	Do I wash myself? etc.	ı	I	do n	ot wa	sh myself, etc.
me	lavé-je? or, est-ce que je me	∣ je	:	ne	me	lave <b>pas</b> ,
te	laves-tu? [lave? etc.	tu	ı	ne	te	laves pas,
se	lave-t-il (-elle, -on)?	il		ne		lave pas,
nous	lavons-nous?	ne	ous	ne	nous	lavons pas,
VOUS	lavez-vous?	V	ous	ne	TOUS	lavez pas,
80	lavent-ils (-elles)?	il		ne	86	lavent pas.

#### INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE COMBINED:-Am I not washing myself? etc.

AFFIRMATIVE.	NEGATIVE.
ne se lave-t-il pas?	ne se lavent-ils pas?
ne te laves-tu pas?	ne vous lavez-vous pas?
ne me lavé-je pas?	ne nous lavons-nous pas?

### AFFIRMATIVE.

#### IMPERATIVE.

lave-toi, wash thyself. ne to lave pas, do not wash thyself. qu'il se lave, let him wash himself. qu'il ne se lave pas, let him not wask himself. [ourselves. lavons-nous, let us wash ourselves. ne nous lavons pas, let us not wash lavez-vous, wash yourselves. ne vous lavez pas, do not wash yourqu'ils se lavent, let them wash themselves. [wash themselves. qu'ils ne se lavent pas, let them not

Like the Present, conjugate the other Simple Tenses:je me lavais, I was washing myself, etc. je me lavai, I washed myself, etc. je me laverai, Ishallwash myself, etc.

avant que je me lavasse,... before I washed myself. je me laverais, si... I should wask myself, if ...

### II.—COMPOUND TENSES.

Formed throughout with être (and never with avoir). PERFECT.

s'être	s'être lavé, to have washed one's self.    s'étant lavé, hoving washed one's self.					
	INDICATIVI	. Present	PER	FECT.	SUBJUN	CTIVE.
	Thave washed:	myself, etc.	Ali	though	I have washe	ed myself, etc.
je	me suis	ľavé (-ée).		/je 🗀	me sois	lavé (-ée).
tu	t' es	lavé (-ée).	€	tu	te sois	lavé (-ée).
il (on	) s' est	lavé.	(dar)	il	se soit	lavé.
elle	s' est	lavée.		elle	se soit	lavée.
nous	nous sommes	lavés (-ées).	황	nous	nous soyons	lavés (-ées).
vous	vous êtes	lavés (-ées).	.g	vous	Vous soyes	lavés (-ées).
ils	se sont	lavés.	Quoique	ils	se soient	lavés.
elles	se sont	lavées.	_	elles	se soient	lavées.

#### INTERROGATIVE.

INFINITIVE.

#### NEGATIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

#### INDICATIVE PRESENT.

Have I washed	myself? etc.	I have not washed my	self, etc.
me suis-je	lavé (-ée)?	je ne me suis pas	lavé (-ée).
t' es-tu	lavé (-ée)?	tu ne t'es pas	lavé (-ée).
s' est-il (-elle)	lavé? (lavée)?	il (elle) <b>ne s' est</b> pas	lavé (-ée).
nous sommes-nous	lavés (-ées)?	n. ne nous sommes pas	lavés (-ées).
<b>vous êtes</b> -vous	lavés (-ées)?	v. ne vous êtes pas	lavés (-ées).
se sont-ils (-elles)	lavés? (lavées)?	ils (elles) ne se sont pas	lavés (-ées).

### INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE COMBINED:-

Have I not washed myself? etc.

ne me suis-je pas		ne nous sommes-nous pas	
ne t'es-tu pas		ne vous êtes-vous pas	
ne s'est-il (-elle) pas	s lavé (-ée)?	ne se sont-ils (-elles) pas	lavés (-ées)?

Like the Pres. Perfect are conjugated the other Compound Tenses: I had washed myself, etc. I might have washed myself, etc. je m' étais (me fus) lavé (-ée). je me fusse lavé (-ée), etc. I should have washed myself, etc. I shall have washed myself, etc. je me serais lavé (-ée), etc. je me serai lavé (-ée).

The Participle Perfect must agree in Gender and Number with the Reflexive Pronoun if the latter is the Direct Object; the Part. Perfect remains invariable if the Reflexive Pronoun is an *Indirect* Object:-Elle s'est lavée; She has washed herself; but— "Elle s'est procuré un billet;" She has got a ticket for herself.

The Reflexive Form of conjugation is also used with Reciprocal Ieros, i.e., Verbs the action of which, instead of reacting (reflecting) on the same agent (i.e. the Subject), is described as mutually affecting the two or more different agents implied by the Subject:-

Ils so haissent, they hate each other, or one another.

#### § 7.—Impersonal Verbs.

#### (a) Denoting the state of the atmosphere:

il tonne, il éclaire. En hiver il gèle, il neige. Au printemps il dégèle.

Pendant un orage il pleut, il grêle, During a thunderstorm it rains, it hails, it thunders, it lightens. In winter it freezes, it snows. In spring it thaws.

Ouel temps (pron. = tan) fait-il?— What sort of weather is it? mauvais temps.

Tantôt il fait beau temps, tantôt Sometimes it is fine, at other times it is bad weather.

Au mois d'août (pron. = ou) il fait chaud.

Au printemps il fait doux. En automne\* il fait frais. En hiver (pron. = ivère) il fait froid. In winter it is cold. Il fait jour à six heures.

In autumn it is cool. It is daylight at six.

In August it is hot.

In spring it is mild.

Il fait nuit (sombre) après le It is dark after sunset. coucher du soleil. En hiver il fait du brouillard. En mars il fait de la poussière.

Il fait clair de lune.

In winter it is foggy. In March it is dusty. The moon shines.

\* In automne, the m is not pronounced.

#### (b) Only occasionally impersonal:-

Il s'agit de faire son devoir. De quoi s'agissait-il?-Il s'agissait de payer. De qui s'agissait-il?-Il s'agissait de nous. Il s'agira de votre honneur.

The question is to do one's duty.\* What was it necessary to do? It was necessary to pay. Who was concerned?-We were concerned. Your honour will be at stake.

\* Notice the different ways of rendering s'agir de in English.

Il importe que vous restiez. It is important that you should stay. Il arrive souvent qu'on est trompé. It often happens that one is deceived. Il semble que cela soit facile. It seems to be easy. Il y va de votre vie. Your life is at stake, etc. Il y va de vos intérêts. Your interests are at stake, etc.

Il me faut une clef (pron. = clé). I want (must have) a key.

Il to faut un dé, etc. See Ex. 42-43.

You want (must have) a thimble.

#### Y avoir, (there) to be.—I. SIMPLE TENSES.

Il y a quelqu'un ici. Il y a des gens là-bas.

Il y avait (eut) une fois une fée.

Il y avait (out) des accidents.

Il y aura (aurait) du fruit.

Crois-tu qu'il y ait du danger? Quoiqu'il y eût du danger.

There is some one here. There are people over there. There was once a fairy. There were (occurred) accidents. There will (would) be fruit.

Do you think there is any danger? Although there was danger.

#### II. COMPOUND TENSES.

Il y a (avait) ou un orage, etc.

Il y aura eu un accident, etc.

Il y aurait eu des pertes, etc. Quoiqu il y ait eu de la pluie. There has (had) been a thunderstorm, etc.

There must have been an accident,

There would have been losses, etc. Although there has been some rain.

#### III. INTERROGATIVE.

Y a-t-il loin d'ici à Genève? Combien y a-t-il d'ici à Londres? — How far is it to London? — Y avait-il souvent des concerts?

Y a-t-il eu un orage?

Y a-t-il longtemps que tu es ici?— Have you been here a long time?— Mais oui, il y a une demi-heure. Combien y a-t-il qu'il est parti?—

Il n'y a que quinze jours.

Is it far from here to Geneva? Were there often concerts? Has there been a storm?

Why yes, half an hour.

How long has he been gone?-Only a fortnight.

#### IV. NEGATIVE.

Il n'y a pas de danger ici.

Il n'y avait jamais tant de monde.

Il n'y a guère eu de visiteurs.

Il n'y avait pas eu d'argent.

There is no danger here.

There were never so many people. There have hardly been any

visitors.

There had not been any money, etc.

#### V. Interrogative-Negative.

N'y a-t-il personne à la maison? M'y avait-il rien à faire?

M'y aurait-il pas eu de l'eau?

Is there nobody at home?

Was there nothing to do (to be done)? Would not there have been any water ?

IRREGULAR
N.B.—(1.) The Future, Imperative, and Subjunctive are only given when

§ 8.—First

INFINITIVE PRES.	PARTICIPLE PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.	
aller, to go.  Fur. j' irai, I shall go, etc.	all-ant, going.	allé, gone.  Compound Tenses. je suis allé, j' étais allé, je fus allé, je serai allé, etc.	j' allai, etc. I went, etc.	
s' en aller, to go away. Fur. je m'en irai,		s' en (être) allé FECT (Indéfini).	je m' en allai, etc.  I went away, etc.	
I shall go away, etc.	je m' en suis } allé (-ée), il s' en est allé, n. nous en sommes allés (-ées), v. vous en êtes allés (-ées), ils s' en sont allés.			
ne pas s' en aller, not to go away. Fur. je ne m' en irai pas,	not going away. allé, not to have		NEGATIVE je ne m' en allai pas, etc. I did not go away, etc.	
Ishallnot go away, etc.	je ne m' en suis pas allé (-ée), tu ne t' en es pas allé, il ne s' en est pas allé, n. ne n. en sommes pas allés v. ne v. en êtes pas allés, ils ne s' en sont pas allés.			
	PRESENT PER	FECT (Indéfini).	INTERROGA	
Fur. m'en irai-je? Shall I go away? etc.	s' en est-il (elle) n. en sommes-no v. en êtes-vous a	-ée) ? allé (-ée)? us allés (-ées) ?	m'en allai-je? etc.  Did I go away?  etc.	
		NTERROGATIVE FECT (Indéfini).	AND NEGATIVE	
FUTURE: nem'enirai-jepas? Shall I not go way? etc.	ne m' en suis-je pas allé (-ée)? ne t' en es-tu pas allé? ne s' en est-il pas allé? ne n. en sommes-nous pas allés (-ées)? ne v. en êtes-vous pas allés? ne s' en sont-ils pas allés?		ne m' en allai-j pas ? etc. Did not I go away etc.	

BS. larly formed. (2.) The Conditional always follows the Future.

ugation.	
:ATIVE PRES. SUBJUNCTIVE PRES.	Imperative.
is, I go, etc. i, tu aill-e, I go, etc. tu aill-e, ons, il aill-e, n. all-ions, ez, v. all-iez, it. ils aill-ent.	— allons, let us go. va, go. allez, go (ye).  (vas- before en or y: as— vas-en chercher; vas-y.)
en vais, an vas, tu t' en aille, tu t' en ailles, il s' en aille, n. nous en allions, v. vous en alliez, ils s' en aillent.	va-t' en, go (thou) away. allons-nous-en, let us go away. allez-vous-en, go (ye) away.
f. t'envaispas, je ne m' en aille pas, etc. s' en va pas, nous en allons pas, vous en allez pas, s' en vont pas.	ne t' en va pas, do not go away. ne nous en allons pas, let us not go away. ne vous en allez pas, Lo not (ye) go away.
FORM. INDICATIVE PRESENT.	Infinitive Pres.
vais-je? nous en allons-n.? vas-tu? vous en allez-v.? va-t-il? s' en vont-ils?	envoyer, to send. FUT. j' enverrai. The other parts are regular. For Indic. Pres. and Subj. Pres.
an vais-je pas? Am I not going en vas-tu pas? [away? en va-t-il pas? s en allors-nous pas? en va-t-ils pas?	see § 3.  Thus: renvoyer, to send back:—  FUT. je renverrai, etc.

#### § 9.—Second

Obs.—All Irregular Verbs of the Second
(1) by the absence of the character -iss- in the Part. Pres., and its derived tenses;
(2) by the Present Tense-inflections (singular) s, s, t, or e, es, e, instead of

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
(The Future is given only when irregular.)		(The Past Indefinite is given only when formed with être.)	<u>.</u>
(a) dorm-ir to sleep	dorm-ant	dormi COMPOUND TENSES.  j'ai (aie) j'avais j'eus (eusse) j'aurais  dormi. j'aurais	je dorm-is, tu dorm-is, il dorm-it, n. dorm-îmes, v. dorm-îtes, ils dorm-irent.
ment-ir to lie	ment-an.	menti	je ment-is, etc.
se repent-ir to repent	se repent-ant	repenti (il s'est repenti, elle s'est repentie, n.n. sommes repentie elles se sont repen- ties). See p. 21.	je me repent-iz, etc.
sent-ir to feel, to smell	sent-ant	senti	je sent-is, etc.
serv-ir to serve	serv-ant	servi	je serv-is, etc.
part-ir to set out	part-ant	parti ; See p. 13. (il est parti, elle est partie, n. sommes partis(es)	je part-is, etc.
sort-ir to go out	sort-ant	sorti (il est sorti, elle est sortie, n. sommes sortis(es)	je sort-is, etc.
bouill-ir to boil (intrans.)	bouill-ant	bouilli	je bouill-is, etc.
faill-ir to fail Fur. faudrai	(faill-ant)	failli	je faill-is, etc.

### jugation.

agation differ from the Regular—
are:—fin-ir, fin-iss-ant, n. fin-iss-ons, etc., with dorm-ir, dorm-ant, n. dorm-ons, etc., it.

,		
NDICATIVE PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	COMPOUND VERBS AND REMARKS.
following drop their final m-consonants (m, t, v, ill) the Singular:—		Conjugate thus—
lor-s, lor-s, lor-t, dorm-ons, dorm-ex, dorm-ent.	je dorm-e, tu dorm-es, il dorm-e, n. dorm-ions, v. dorm-iez, ils dorm-ent.	endormir, to lull to sleep. s'endormir, to fall asleep. se rendormir, to fall asleep again.
nen-s, n. ment-ens, nen-s, v. ment-es, nen-t, ils ment-ent.	je ment-e, etc.	démentir, to give the lie.
ne repen-s, e repen-t, 1. repent-ens, repent-es, e repent-es,	je me <b>repent-e,</b> etc.	
en-s, n. sent-ens, en-s, v. sent-ex, en-t, ils sent-ent.	je sent-e, etc.	consentir, to consent. pressentir, to forebode. ressentir, to resent; se ressentir, fo feel the effects.
er-s, n. serv-ons, er-s, v. serv-ez, er-t, ils serv-ent.	je serv-e, etc.	(asservir, to enslave, is regular: asservissant, etc.) desservir, to clear the table; to do an ill office.
par-s, n. part-ons, par-s, v. part-es, par-t, ils part-ent.	je <b>part-e</b> , etc.	départir, to dispense, to divide. repartir, to start again; repartant. (répartir, to distribute, is regular : répartissant, etc.)
sor-s, n. sort-ons, sor-s, v. sort-ex, sor-t, ils sort-ent.	je sort-e, etc.	ressortir, to go out again. (ressortir, to be in the jurisdiction: ressortissant, etc.) [etc.) (assortir, to assort: assortissant,
bou-s, n. bouill-ons bou-s, v. bouill-ex, bou-t, ils bouill-ent	je bouill-e, etc.	faire bouillir, to boil (transitive).  * The 1st and 2nd pers. are hardly ever used. défaillir, to feel faint, used in In-
hu-x, n. faill-ons)* hu-x, v. faill-es), hu-t, ils faill-ent.	il faill-e, etc.	finitive; Pres. Indic. Plur.; Pres. Part., Imperf. and Pret.; seldom in other tennes. faillir = to become bankrupt.; regular.

§ 9.—Be

			<b>7</b> , <b>2</b> ,
Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIP. PERF.	PRETERITE.
(b) vêt-ir to clothe	vêt-ant	vêtu	je vêt-is, etc.
fu-ir to flee	fuy-ant	fui	je fui-s, etc.
ou-ïr to hear (Fut, j' oirai, obsolete)	(oy-ant)	ouï	(j' ouis)
cueill-ir to gather, collect Fut. je cueillerai	cueill-ant	cueill-i	je cueill-is, etc.
saill-ir to jut out	saill-ant	saill-i	il saill-it, etc.
assaill-ir to assail	assaill-ant	assaill-i	j' assaill-is, etc.
ouvr-ir to open	ouvr-ant	ouv-ert	j' ouvr-is, etc.
couvr-ir to cover	couvr-ant	couv-ert	je couvr-is, etc.
offr-ir to offer	offr-ant	off-ert	j' offr-is, etc.
souffr-ir to suffer	souffr-ant	souff-ert	je souffr-is, etc.
	,	l .	-

### Conjugation—continued.

INDICATIV	PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	Compound Verbs and Remarks.
je vêt-s, tu vêt-s, il vêt,	n. vêt-ons, v. vêt-ez, ils vêt-ent.	je <b>vêt-e</b> , etc.	dévêtir, <i>to divest.</i> revêtir, <i>to invest</i> .
je fui-s, tu fui-s, il fui-t,	n. fuy-ons, v. fuy-ez, ils fui-ent.	je <b>fui-e</b> , etc.	s'enfuir, <i>to run away.</i>
(j' oi-s, (tu oi-s, (il oi-t,	n. oy-ons), v. oy-ez), ils oi-ent).	(j' <b>oie</b> , etc.)	All Simple Parts, except the Infinit. and Part. Perf., are obsolete.
je cueill-e, tu cueill-es	n. cueill-ons, v. cueill-ez, ils cueill-ent.	je <b>cueill-e, e</b> tc.	accueillir, to welcome, to receive. recueillir, to gather, to cueillir, reap, se recueillir, to collect one's self.
il saill-e,	ils saill-ent.	il saill-e, etc.	Fur. saillera. saillir, to gush, is regular: saillissant.
tu assaill-e	, n. assaill-ons s,v. assaill-ez, , ilsassaill-ent	j' assaill-e, etc.	assaillir, to assail; tressaillir, to start, shudder.
j' ouvr-e, tu ouvr-es, il ouvr-e,	n. ouvr-ons, v. ouvr-ez, ils ouvr-ent.	j' ouvr-e, etc.	entr'ouvrir, <i>to set ajar</i> ; rouvrir, <i>to</i> reopen.
tu couvr-es	n. couvr-ons, ,v. couvr-ez, ils couvr-ent.	je <b>couvr-e</b> , etc.	découvrir, to discover.
j' offr-e, tu offr-es, il offr-e,	n. offr-ons, v. offr-ez, ils offr-ent.	j' offr-e, etc.	
tu souffr-es	n. souffr-ons, ,v.souffr-ez, ils souffr-ent.	je <b>souffr-e,</b> etc.	

### § 9.—Second

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
Fur. contracted:— (c) acquer-ir to acquire Fur. j'acquer rai	acquér-ant	Contracted:— acqu-is	j' acqu-is, etc.
ten-ir to hold Fur. je tiendrai	ten-ant	ten-u	je tin-s, n. tîn-mes, tu tin-s, v. tîn-tes, il tin-t, ils tin-rent.
ven-ir  to come  FUT. je viendrai	ven-ant	ven-u (je suis ven-u (-ue), tu es ven-u (-ue), il est ven-ue, elle est ven-ue, n. sommes ven-us ((-ues), v. êtesven-us(-ues), elles sont ven-us, elles sont ven-ues).	je vin-s, n. vîn-mes, tu vin-s, v. vîn-tes, il vin-t, ils vin-rent
mour-ir to die Fur. je mourrai	mour-ant	mort (il est mot elle est mort-e, ils sont mort-s, elles sont mort-es).	je mour-us, etc.
cour-ir to run FUT. je courrai	cour-ant	cour-u	je cour-us, etc.
Defective:— gesir to lie, to rest	gis-ant* Impf. gisais* *Pron. s=ss	(wanting)	(wanting)
orir 10 strike	(wanting)	feru (obsolete)	(wanting)

### Conjugation—continued.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	Compound Verbs and Remarks.
The stem vowel altered in it acquier-s, tu acquier-s, il acquier-s, n. acquer-ons, v. acquer-ez, ils acquièr-ent.	j' acquièr-e, tu acquièr-es, il acquièr-es, il acquièr-es, v. acquér-ions, v. acquér-iez, ils acquièr-ent.	conquérir, to conquer. s'enquérir, to inquire; requérir, to require. querir, to fetck (Infinitive only).
je tien-s, tu tien-s, tu tien-t, n. ten-ons, v. ten-ez, ils tienn-ent. je vien-s, tu vien-s, tu vien-t, n. ven-ons, v. ven-ez, ils vienn-ent.	je tienn-e, tu tienn-es, il tienn-es, il tienn-e, v. ten-iez, ils tienn-ent. je vienn-e, tu vienn-es, il vienn-es, vienn-es, v. ven-iez, ils vienn-ent.	s'abstenir, to abstain; appartenir, to belong. contenir, to contain; détenir, to detain. entreenir, to keep up; maintenir, to maintain. obtenir, to obtain; retenir, toretain soutenir, to sustain, to assert. advenir (or avenir), to happen; circonvenir, to impose upon; contrevenir h, to infring; convenir, to suit; devenir, to become; disconvenir, to disagree; intervenir, to interfere; parvenir, to attain, to reach; prévenir, to warn; provenir, to proceed from; revenir, to come back; se souvenir de, to remember; subvenir de, to retieve; survenir, to happen.
je meur-s, tu meur-s, il meur-t, n. mour-ons, v. mour-ez, ils meur-ent.	je meur-e, tu meur-e, il meur-e, n. mour-ions, v. mour-iez, ils meur-ent.	se mourir, to be dying, used in all simple tenses, except in the Preterite.
je cour-s, tu cour-s, il cour-t, n. cour-ons, v. cour-ez, ils cour-ent.	je cour-e, tu cour-es, il cour-e, n. cour-ions, v. cour-iez, ils cour-ent.	accourir, to hasten to; concourir, to concur; courre (le cerf), Obsol. Infin., to hunt (the stag, etc.); discourir, to dis- course; parcourir, to run over; secourir, to help, etc.
- n. gis-ons, - v. gis-ez, il gît, ils gis-ent.  (snanting)	(wanting) (wanting)	Obs. Ci-git, here lies (on grave- stones).  issir (obsolete), to descend from jesuis lasu, etc

### § 10.—Third

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
FUT. contracted :-		Contracted:	Contracted:
(a) recev-cir to receive FUT. je recevrai	recev-ant	reç-u	je reçu-s, tu reçu-s, il reçu-t, n. reçû-mes, v. reçû-tes, ils reçu-rent.
dev-oir to owe Fut. je devrai, Cond. je devrais, I ought to	dev-ant	dû, f. due  Notice the CONDIT.  PERF.:— j'aurais dû,  l'ought to have, etc.	je du-s, n. dû-mes, tu du-s, v. dû-tes, il du-t, ils du-rent.
(b) sav-oir to know Fut. je saurai	sach-ant, (IMPF. savais)	su	je <b>su-s</b> , etc.
mouv-oir to move Fur. je mouvrai	mouv-ant	mu	je mu-s, etc.
pleuv-oir  to rain  Fur. il pleuvra	pleuv-ant	plu	il plu-t, etc.
pouv-oir can, to be able FUT. je pourrai	pouv-ant	pu . Notice the CONDIT. PERF.:— j'aurais pu, [etc. I might (could) have,	je <b>pu-s</b> , etc.
voul-oir  to wish, to want Fur. je voudrai Cond. je voudrais	voul-ant	voulu  Notice the CONDIT.  PERF.:— j'aurais voulu, [etc.	je voulu-s, etc.
Cond. je voudrais I should like to val-oir to be worth FUT. je vaudrai	val-ant	I should have liked to, valu  Notice the CONDIT. PERF.:— 1 aurait mieux valu, it would have been	je valu-s, etc.
fall-oir, must, to be necessary UT. il faudra	(wanting)	fallu [better. IMPERSONAL :—	(il me fallu-t, il te fallu-t, il lui fallu-t, etc.

### igation.

ICATI	vg Present.	Subjunc	TIVE PRES.	COMP. VERBS AND REMARKS.
oi-s,	The Stem co. n. recev-ons, v. recev-ez, ils reçoiv-ent.	reçoiv-es,	recev-ions, recev-iez, reçoiv-ent.	apercevoir, to perceive; con- cevoir, to conceive; perce- voir, to collect (taxes, etc., décevoir, to deceive.
-6, -8, -t,	n. dev-ons, v. dev-ez, ils doiv-ent.	doiv-e, doiv-es, doiv-e,	dev-ions, dev-iez, doiv-ent.	redevoir, to owe still.
-a, -s, -t,	n. sav-ons, v. sav-ez, ils sav-ent.	sach-es, sach-es, sach-es,	sach-ions, sach-iez, sach-ent.	Imperative: Sing. (2) sache. Plur. (1) sachons. ,, (2) sachez.
u-s, u-s, u-t,	n. mouv-ons, v. mouv-ez, ils meuv-ent.	meuv-e, meuv-es, meuv-e,	mouv-ions, mouv-iez, meuv-ent.	émouvoir, to stir up, to affect. promouvoir, to promote, used in Infinit. and Compound Tenses only.
_ u-t,		il pleuve,	=	
l-X,* l-X, l-t,	n. pouv-ons, v. pouv-ez, ils peuv-ent.	puiss-e, puiss-es, puiss-e,	puiss-ions, puiss-iez, puiss-ent.	* Or—je puis (1st pers. only). Interrog. akways:—puis-je?
i-X, i-X, i-t,	n. voul-ons, v. voul-ez, ils veul-ent.	veuill-e, veuill-es, veuill-e,	voul-iez,	Veux, voulons, voulez, basic spood as to
1-X, 1-X, 1-t,	n. val-ons, v. val-ez, ils val-ent.	vaill-e, vaill-es, vaill-e,	val-ions, val-iez, vaill-ent.	PRESENT SUBJ. of prévaloir, to prevail:—je prévale, etc. équivaloir, to be equivalent; revaloir, to return like for like.
but,	il nous faut, il vous faut, l leur faut.	il me faill il te faill il lui faill	le,	falloir is Impersonal (see Ex. 42-43).

[§

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
(c) déch-oir to decay FUT. je décherrai	(wanting) (IMPF.:— déchoyais)	déchu (îl est déchu, elle est déchue)	je déchu-s, etc.
éch-oir to fall due Fut. écherra	éch-é-ant	échu (il est échu, elle est échue)	j'échu-s, tu échu-s, il échu-t, etc.
voir <i>to see</i> Fut. je verrai	voy-ant	vu.	je vi-s, etc.
(d) (Fur.contracted.) s'asse-oir to sit down Fur.jem'assiérai or— je m'assoirai or— je m'assoirai	s'assey-ant  or— s'assoy-ant	assis (il s'est assis, elle s'est assise)	je m'assi-s, tu t'assi-s, il s'assi-t, n. n. assî-mes, v. v. assî-tes, ils s'assi-rent.
surse-oir to suspend, put off, defer (law- term)	sursoy-ant	sursis	je <b>sursi-s</b> , etc.
seoir, to fit, to be becoming Fur. il sièra	sey-ant (séant) IMPF.:— il seyait	(wanting)* No Compound Tenses	(wanting)
ppar-oir to be evident	(wanting)	(wanting)	(wanting)

### Conjugation—continued.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	COMPOUND VERBS AND REMARKS.
je déchoi-s.		
il déchoi-s, il déchoi-t, n. déchoy-ons, v. déchoy-ez, ils déchoi-ent.	je déchoi-e	choir, to fall, is only used in the Infinitive and Part. Perf. :— chu, f. chue.
il échoi-t, — il éche-t, ils échoi-ent.	(wanting)	si le cas y échet, le cas échéant, s'il y échet,
je voi-s, n. voy-ons, tu voi-s, v. voy-ez, il voi-t, ils voi-ent.	je voi-e, etc.	pourvoir, to provide; prévoir, to foresee:— PRET. pourvoirai; prévoirai. FUT. pourvoirai; prévoirai. entrevoir, to catch a glimpse; revoir, to see again.
je m' assied-s, tu t' assied-s, il s' assied, n. n. assey-ons, v. v. assey-ez, ils s' assey-ent. or— assoi-s, assoy-ons,	assey-e, assey-es, assey-ions, assey-iex, assey-ent; or— assoi-e, etc.	asseoir, to seat, to set. rasseoir, to set again (rassis, com- posed, stale). se rasseoir, to sit down again.
assoi-s, assoy-ez, assoi-t, assoi-ent.	assoy-ions, etc.	
je sursoi-s, tu sursoi-s, il sursoi-t, n. sursoy-ons, v. sursoy-ez, ils sursoi-ent	(unusual)	
il sied, ils sié-ent. Imperat. : sieds-toi	(unusual)	seoir, to sit, to be situated; PRES. PART., seant, sitting (law term); "PAST PART., sis, f. sise, situated.
l appert (law term)	(wanting)	7

# § 11.—Fourth

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
			Preterite formed from the Pres. Part. stem.
(a) plaind-re to pity	plai-gn-ant	plaint*	plai-gn-is, -gnî-mes, plai-gn-is, -gnî-tes, plai-gn-it, -gni-rent.
ceind-re to gird	cei-gn-ant	ceint	cei-gn-is, etc.
joind-re to join	joi-gn-ant	joint	je joi-gn-is, etc.
(b) condui-re to lead, to conduct	condui-s-ant	conduit	je condui-s-is, tu condui-s-is, il condui-s-it, n. condui-s-îtes, v. condui-s-îtes, ils condui-s-irent.
construi-re to construct, to build	construi-s-ant	construit	je construi-s-is, etc.
cui-re to cook, to bake	cui-s-ant	cuit	je cui-s-is, etc.
nui-re to hurt, harm	nui-s-ant	nui	je nui-s-is, etc.
lui-re to shine	lui-s-ant	lui	(wanting)
hori-re to write	écri-v-ant	écrit	j' écri-v-is, etc.

## Conjugation.

Indicative Present.	Subjunctive Pres.	Compound Verbs and Remarks.
The original Latin stem-con Pres. Part. and its	sonant appears in the derivatives.	* Part. Perf. derived from Latin
je plain-s, n. plai-gn-ons tu plain-s, v. plai-gn-es il plain-t, ils plai-gn-ent	plai-gn-es,-gn-iez,	supine in -nctum, etc. se plaindre, to complain. craindre, to fear. contraindre, to compel.
je cein-s, n. cei-gn-ons, tu cein-s, v. cei-gn-es, il cein-t, ils cei-gn-ent.	je <b>cei-gn-e</b> , etc.	atteindre, to reach; astreindre, to compel; enfreindre, to in- fringe; éteindre, to extin- guish; feindre, to feign; peindre, to paint; restreindre,
je join-s, n. joi-gn-ons, tu join-s, v. joi-gn-es, il join-t, ils joi-gn-ent.	je joi-gn-e, etc.	to restrict; teindre, to dye. enjoindre, to enjoin: rejoindre, to overtake; poindre, to prick, to dawn; oindre, to anoint.
je condui-s, tu condui-s, il condui-t, n. condui-s-ons, v. condui-s-es, ils condui-s-ent.	conduis-e, conduis-es, conduis-e, conduis-ions, conduis-ies, conduis-ent.	Thus all verbs in -duire: déduire, to deduct; éconduire, to show out; introduire, to introduce; produire, to produce; réduire, to reduce; séduire, to seduce; traduire, to translate. The simple verb "duire" is quite obsolete.
je construi-s, tu construi-s, il construi-t, n. construi-s-ens, v. construi-s-es, ils construi-s-ent.	je <b>construis-e,</b> etc.	détruire, to destroy; instruire, to instruct.
je cui-s, n. cui-s-ons, tu cui-s, v. cui-s-es, il cui-t, ils cui-s-ent.	je <b>cuis-e</b> , etc.	recuire, to boil (bake) again— (biscuit, twice baked).
je nui-s, n. nui-s-ons, tu nui-s, v. nui-s-os, il nui-t, ils nui-s-ont.	je <b>nuis-e</b> , etc.	
je lui-s, n. l <b>ui-s-ons,</b> tu lui-s, v. l <b>ui-s-ez,</b> il lui-t, ils l <b>ui-s-ent</b> .	je luis-e, etc.	reluire, to glitter, to gleam.
j'écri-s, n. écri-v-ons, tu écri-s, v. écri-v-es, il écri-t, ils écri-v-ent.	j' <b>écriv-e,</b> etc.	décrire, to describe; inscrire, to inscribe; prescrire, to proscrire, to proscrire, to proscrire, to subscribe; to crire, to copy.

### § 11.—Pourth

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
(c) trai-re to milk	tray-ant	trait*	(wanting)
vainc-re to conquer	vainqu-ant	vaincu	je <b>vainqu-is,</b> etc.
suiv-re to follow	suiv-ant	suivi	je suiv-is, etc.
		PRETERITE and PA	RT. PERF. contracted:-
ri-re to laugh	ri-ant	ri	je <b>ri-s, e</b> tc.
(d) suffi-re to suffice	suffi-s-ant	suffi	je <b>suffi-s,</b> etc.
di-re to say	di-s-ant	dit	je di-s, n. dî-mes, tu di-s, v. dî-tes, il di-t, ils di-rent.
maudi-re to curse	maudi-ss-ant	maudit	je <b>maudi-a, etc.</b>
fai-re to do Fut. je ferai	fai-s-ant* (* pron. fesant, fesais, fesons)	fait	je fi-s, etc.
(e) mett-re to put, to place	mett-ant	mis	je <b>mi-s, e</b> tc.
pren-d-re to take, to catch	pren-ant	pris	je pri-s, etc.
batt-re o åeat	batt-ant	battu	batt-is, etc.

## Conjugation—continued.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	COMPOUND VERBS AND REMARKS.
je trai-s, n. tray-ons, tu trai-s, v. tray-es, il trai-t, ils trai-ent.	je trai-e, etc.	* P.P. derived from Latin supine tractum. abstraire, to abstract; distraire,
je vainc-s, n. vainqu-ons, tu vainc-s, v. vainqu-ez, il vainc. ils vainqu-ent.	je <b>vainqu-e</b> , etc.	to divert; extraire, to extract; soustraire, to take away, etc.; braire, to bray (3rd pers.only).  Obs. qu, instead of c, to preserve the hard sound of c; compare—public, f. publique.
je sui-s, n. suiv-ons, tu sui-s, v. suiv-ez, il sui-t, ils suiv-ent.	je suiv-e, etc.	convaincre, to convince.  poursuivre, to pursue, to prosecute. s'ensuivre, to follow (intransitive), used in 3rd pers. only.
je ri-s, n. ri-ons, tu ri-s, v. ri-ez, il ri-t, ils ri-ent.	je ri-e, etc.	sourire, to smile.
je suffi-s, n. suffi-s-ons, tu suffi-s, v. suffi-s-ez, il suffi-t, ils suffi-s-ent.	je <b>suffis-e</b> , etc.	confire, to preserve (pickles, etc.), P.P. confit. circoncire, to circumcise.
je di-s, n. di-s-ons, tu di-s, v. DI-T-ES, il di-t, ils di-s-ent.	je dis-e, etc.	redire, to say again, v. redites, contredire, to contradict, v. contredisez. dédire, to retract, v. dédisez. intendire to (which v interdisez.
maudi-s, maudi-ss-ons, maudi-s, maudi-ss-ez, maudi-st-ent.	je maudiss-e, etc.	interdire, to forbid, v. interdisez. médire, to speak ill, v. médisez. prédire, to predict, v. prédisez.
je fai-s, n. fai-s-ons*, tu fai-s, v. FAI-T-ES, il fai-t, ils FONT.	fass-e, fass-ions, fass-es, fass-ier, fass-e, fass-ent.	contrefaire, to feign; défaire, to undo; refaire, to do again; satisfaire, to satisfy; surfaire, to overcharge.
je met-s, n. mett-ons, tu met-s, v. mett-ez, ils mett-ent.	je mett-e, etc.	admettre, to admit; commettre, to commit; compromettre, to compromettre, to emit; omettre, to omit; permettre, to permit; promettre, to permit; promettre, to deliver, to
je prend-s, n. pren-ons, tu prend-s, v. pren-es, il prend, ils prenn-ent.	prenn-e, pren-ions prenn-es, pren-iez, prenn-e, prennent	delay; soumettre, to subdue; transmettre, to transmit. apprendre, to learn; désapprendre, to unlearn; comprendre, to understand; entreprendre, to understand; entreprendre, to sepa-
je bat-s, n. batt-ons, tu bat-s, v. batt-ez, il bat, ils batt-ent.	je batt- <b>e, e</b> tc.	surprise.  such; séprendire de les les calesses este s' exprendire, to les mis taken; ruprendire, to resur etc.; surprendire, to take

§ 11.—Fourth

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
(f) connaî-t-re	connai-ss-ant	Contracted:	Contracted:—
ιο κποω			tu conn-u-s, il conn-u-t, n. conn-û-mes, v. conn-û-tes, ils conn-u-rent.
paî-t-re to graze	pai-ss-ant	(wanting)	(wanting)
croî-t-re to grow	croi-ss-ant	crû	je <b>crû-s,</b> etc.
naî-t-re to be born	nai-ss-ant	né (il est né, elle est née)	je naqui-s, etc.
(g) croi-re to believe	croy-ant	eru	je cru-s, etc.
plai-re (intrans.) to please	plai-s-ant	plu	je <b>plu-s,</b> etc.
tai-re to keep secret	tai-s-ant	tû, f. tue (il s'est tû, elle s'est tue)	je <b>tu-s,</b> etc
li-re to read	li-s-ant	lu	je lu-s, etc.
boi-re <i>to drink</i>	bu-v-ant	bu	je <b>bu-s,</b> etc.
onolu-r <del>o</del> io conclude	conclu-ant	conclu	je conclu-s, etc.

### Conjugation—continued.

		Compound Verbs and Remarks
Pres. Part. an		
	d its derivatives.	
je connai-s, tu connai-s, il connaî-t, n. connai-ss-ons, v. connai-ss-ex, ils connai-ss-ent,	je connai-ss-e, .tu connai-ss-es, il connai-ss-ions, v. connai-ss-ies, ils connai-ss-ent.	méconnaître, to slight; reconnaître to recognise. paraître, to appear; apparaître, to appear, to become visible; com paraître, to appear in a cour of justice; disparaître, to dis appear. Obs. The i takes a circumfie:
je pai-s, n. pai-ss-o tu pai-s, v. pai-ss-e il paî-t, ils pai-ss-e	B,	before t only. repaitre, to feed:— PRET. repus, P. P. repu. se repaitre de, to feed on.
je croî-s, n. croi-ss- tu croî-s, v. croi-ss- il croî-t, ils croi-ss-	ex,	accroître, to increase; PRET accrus; P.P. accru. décroître, to decrease; décrus; P.P. décru.
je nai-s, n. nai-ss-c tu nai-s, v. nai-ss-c il naî-t, ilsnai-ss-c	<b>z</b> ,	renaltre, to be born again, to re vive (intrans.), has no Pret nor Part. Perf.
je croi-s, n. eroy-on tu croi-s, v. eroy-ez il croi-t, ils croi-ent	croi-es, croy-iez,	accroire, is only used in Infin. after faire:— faire accroire, to make believe.
je plai-s, n. plai-s-o tu plai-s, v. plai-s-o il plaî-t, ils <b>plai-s-</b> o	<b>z</b> ,	déplaire, to displease. complaire, to humour.
je tai-s, n. tai-s-or tu tai-s, v. tai-s-es il tai-t, ils tai-s-er	, ,	se taire, to be silent (hushed):— je me tais, tu te tais, il se tait, etc.
je li-s, n. li-s-ons tu li-s, v. li-s-ez, il li-t, ils li-s-ent	,  , ,	élire, to elect. réélire, to elect again. relire, to read again.
je boi-s, n. bu-v-or tu boi-s, v. bu-v-es il boi-t, ils boi-v-es	, boiv-es, buv-iez,	boire (intransitive), to blot.
conclu-s, conclu-on conclu-s, conclu-ez, conclu-t, conclu-ent.	je conclu-e, etc.	exclure, to exclude.

## § 11.—Fourth

Infinitive Pres.	PARTICIP. PRES.	PARTICIPLE PERF.	PRETERITE.
(h) absou-d-re to absolve	absol-v-ant	Contracted:— absous* (f. absoute)	(wanting)
résou-d-re to resolve, to change into	résol-v-ant	résous,+ résolu‡	je résolu-s, etc.
mou-d-re  to grind (in a  mill, etc.)	mou-l-ant	moulu	je <b>moulu-s, e</b> tc.
cou-d-re to sew	cou-s-ant	cousu	je cousi-s
viv-re to live	viv-ant	∀écu	je <b>vécu-s</b>
(i) brui-re to roar, rustle	bruy-ant	bruit (unusua!)	Defective
clo-re  to close  Fur. je clorai	(wanting)	clos .	(wanting)
éclo-re  to blow,  to be hatched	(wanting)	éclos	(wanting)
fri-re to fry Fut. je frirai	(wanting)	frit	(wanting)
Sourd-re  to spring out  UT, il sourdra	(wanting)	(wanting)	il sourd-it

### ugation-continued.

DICATIVE PRESENT.	Subjunctive Pres.	COMPOUND VERBS AND REMARKS.
Latin final stem-cons. It Pres. Part. and its	, I, or s, appears in derivatives.	
sou-s, n. absol-v-ons sou-s, v. absol-v-ez, sou-t, ils absol-v-ent	j' absolv-e, etc.	* absous, f. absoute, absolved acquitted. absolu (adi.), absolute.
ou-s, n. résol-v-ons ou-s, v. résol-v-ez, ou-t, ils résol-v-ent	je <b>résolv-e,</b> etc.	dissoudre (P. P. dissou-s, -te), to dissous, tiesous, tiesous, dissolved.  † résolu, determined.
oud-s, n. mou-l-ons, oud-s, v. mou-l-ex, oud, ils mou-l-ent.	je moul-e, etc.	émoudre, to whet, to sharpen. rémoudre, to whet again. remoudre, to grind (grain) again.
id-s, n. cou-s-ons, id-s, v. cou-s-ez, id, ils cou-s-ent.	je cous-e, etc.	découdre, to unsew, to rip. recoudre, to sew again.
s, n. viv-ons, v. viv-ez, t, ils viv-ent.	je viv-e, etc.	revivre (intrans.), to come to lift again. faire revivre, to revive (trans.) survivre à, to survive.
)S.		
ii-s, ( <i>no plural</i> ) ii-s, i-t.		Imperf. Indic.:— bruyais, or bruissais, etc.
-s, ( <i>no plural</i> ) -s, ·t.		
3-t, ils éclo-s-ent.		Fur. il éclora. ils écloront.
s <b>, (<i>no plural</i>)</b> s, L		Wanting tenses are formed with faire:— nous faisons frire, etc.
rd, ils sourd-ent.		
B.—For an Alphabe	tical List of Irres	l ular Verbs, see Appendix.

#### § 12.—THE ARTICLE AND THE NOUN (L'ARTICLE ET LE SUBSTANTIF).

#### I.—The Definite Article.

(a) Masculine Singu	lar.
---------------------	------

Le maître parle. The master is speaking. Subject. Dir. Obj. Je respecte le maître. I respect the master. Possessive. Le livre **du** maître. The master's book (the b. of the m.) Indirect Je parle du maître. Cela vient du maître. I speak of the master. Compl. That comes from the master. Il répond au maître. He replies to the master.

#### Masculine Plural,

Subj. Les maîtres parlent. The masters are speaking. Dir. Obj. Je respecte les maîtres. I respect the masters. Possess. Les livres des maîtres. The masters' books (the books of Indir. | Je parle des maîtres.

Compl. | Cela vient des maîtres.

Indir. Obj. | Je parle and --the masters). I speak of the masters. That comes from the masters. I speak to the masters.

#### (b) Feminine Singular.

La reine voyage. The queen is travelling. Subj. Dir. Obj. Je respecte la reine. I respect the queen. The queen's palace (the p. of the q.) I speak of the queen. Le palais de la reine. Possess. Indir. { Je parle de la reine. Compl. { Cela vient de la reine. Indir. Obj. Le roi parle à la reine. That comes from the queen. The king speaks to the queen.

#### Feminine Plural.

Subj. Les reines voyagent. The queens are travelling. Je respecte les reines.
Les palais des reines.
Je parle des reines.
Cela vient des reines. Dir. Obj. I respect the queens. The palaces of the queens. Possess. I speak of the queens. That comes from the queens. Indir. Compl. Indir. Obj. Le roi parle aux reines. The king speaks to the queens.

#### (c) Masculine and Feminine Nouns beginning with a vowel or silent h. Singular.

Masc. Subj. L'Anglais (l'Anglaise) voyage. The Englishman (Englishwoman) is travelling. Je vois l'Anglais (l'Anglaise). L'argent de l'Anglais de l'Anglaise. I see the Englishman, etc. Dir. Obj. Possess. The money of the Englishman, etc.
I speak of the Englishman, etc.

Indir.

Compl.

Compl.

Cela vient de l'Anglais de l'Anglais.

Cela vient de l'Anglais de l'Anglais de l'Anglais de l'Anglais de l'Anglais.

Indir. Obj.

Il répond à l'Anglais Englishman, etc. He replies to the Englishà l'Anglaise. man, etc.

That comes from

Plural.					
The same as before a consonant, but notice the liaison:—					
Subj. Les Anglais les Anglaises voyagent.	The Englishmen (Englishwomen) are travelling.				
Dir. Obj. Je vois les Anglais les Anglaises.	I see the Englishmen, etc.				
Possess. Les jeux des Anglais des Anglaises.	The games of the Englishmen, etc.				
Indir. (Je parle des Anglais des Anglaises. Compl.) Cela vient des Anglais	I speak to the Englishmen, etc.				
( des_Angiaises. )	That comes from the Englishmen, etc.				
Indir. Obj. Il répond aux Anglais aux Anglaises.	He replies to the Englishmen, etc.				

### RECAPITULATION.

		Sing	uiar.	
Masculine, beginning with		Feminine, beginning with		
4	consonant,	a Vowel.	a Consonant,	a Vorvel.
Subj. Dir.Obj.	le roi,	l'Anglais;	la reine,	l'Anglaise.
Possess. Indir.	du roi,	de l'Anglais ;	de la reine,	de l'Anglaise.
Compl. Indir. Obj	au roi,	à l'Anglais;	à la reine,	à l'Anglaise.
-		Plas	wal	

### Plural.

Masculine and Feminine, beginning with a Consonant or Vowel.					
Subj. Dir. Obj.	les rois,	les Anglais;	les reines,	les Anglaises.	
Possess. Indir. Compl.	des rois,	des Anglais;	des reines,	des Anglaises.	
Indir.Obj.	aux rois,	aux Anglais;	aux reines,	aux Anglaises.	

# II. Partitive Article (formed from the Possessive Case of the Definite Article).

(a) If a Noun is taken in a partitive sense, viz., if a certain quantity, number, or fraction of a whole is to be expressed, de and the Definite Article (contracted as below) must be used:—

#### Singular.

		200705000	A7 •
le papier l'argent la toile l'huile (f.)	Definite. the paper. the money. the cloth. the oil.	du papier de l'argent de la toile de l'huile	Partitive. some (any) paper; paper. some (any) money; money; silver. some (any) cloth; cloth. some (any) oil; oil.

#### Plural.

les ciseaux	the scissors.	des	ci
les abricots	the apricots.	des	يaا
168 prunes	the plums.	des	P
oranges	the oranges.	qer	١٥

iseaux some (any) scissors; scissors.
bricots some (any) apricots; apricots.
brunes some (any) plums; plums.
some (any) oranges; orang

(b) When the part or fractions of the thing (or things) denoted by the Noun are expressed, i.e., if the Noun is preceded by an Adverb or a Noun denoting quantity, measure, weight, etc., then 'de' alone, without the Def. Art., must be used: as,

Singular.

Beaucoup de fruit Trop d'argent Il n'a **pas de** pain Une livre de viande Un verre d'eau

Much fruit. Too much money. He has no bread. A pound of meat. A glass of water.

Plural.

Beaucoup de raisins Trop de livres Il n'a point d'amis Une livre de cerises Un plat de légumes

Many grapes. Too many books. He has no friends at all. A pound of cherries. A dish of vegetables.

#### III. The Indefinite Article (L'ARTICLE INDÉFINI).

(The same before a Vowel as before a Consonant; but notice the different pronunciation.)

#### Masculine.

Subj. Un maître, un ami, a parlé. A (one) master, friend. has spoken. Dir. Obj. Je cherche un maître, un ami. I am seeking a master, a friend. A master's, friend's, advice. Possess. L'avis d'un maitre, d'un ami. The advice of a master, of a friend.

I speak of a master, Compl. Te parle d'un mattre, d'un ami, of a friend. Ind. Obj. Je parle à un maître, à un ami. I speak to a master, to a friend.

Feminine. Thas spoken. Subj. Une reine, une amie, a parlé. A queen, a friend, Dir. Obj. On respecte une reine, une amie. One respects a queen, etc. L'estime d'une reine, d'une amie. Possess. Indir. On parle d'une reine, d'une amie. Compl. Cela vient d'une reine, d'une amie. Indir. Indir. Obj. On parle à une reine, à une amie.

Obs. 1. With a Verb used negatively de must, as a rule, be used instead of une; as, Je n'ai pas de maître. Elle n'a point d'amie. Ols. 2. Des may be considered the Plural of the Indefinite Article (generally not expressed in English);—

Subj.
Dir. Obj. Des maltres, des amis ; des reines. Masters, friends, queens.
Ind. Obj. A des maltres, à des amis. To (some or any) masters, etc.

#### IV. Formation of the Plural of Substantives and Adjectives.

Adjectives, used attributively or predicatively, agree in Number and Gender with the Substantive they qualify, whether they stand before or after it:-

General Rule: Add -s to all Nouns not specified in the Special Rules below :-

A true friend is faithful. Sing. Le vrai ami est fidèle. Plur. Les vrais amis sont fidèles. True friends are faithful.

Special Rules:-

(a) Nouns ending in -s, -x, -z (sibilants) remain unchanged\*:-

Ce Français est heureux. Ces Français sont heureux. La noix est un fruit délicieux. Les noix sont des fruits délicieux.

This Frenchman is happy. These Frenchmen are happy. The nut is a delicious fruit. Nuts are delicious fruits.

Thus-le bas, les bas, stockings; le nez, les nez, noses.

(b) Nouns ending in -au, -eu, take x:-

Son beau château est vieux. Ses beaux châteaux sont vieux. Leur nouveau jeu est amusant.

His fine castle is old. His fine castles are old. Their new game is amusing. Leurs nouveaux jeux sont amusants. Their new games are amusing.

Bleu, blue, takes -8:—les cieux sont bleus, the skies are blue.

Obs. Of Nouns ending in -ou, only the following seven take x:-

les bijoux, the jewels; les cailloux, the pebbles; les choux, the cabbages; les poux, the lice;

les genoux, the knees.
les hiboux, the owls.
les joujoux, the playthings.
but—les clous, les trous, etc.

\*Thus also (1) Indeclinable Parts of Speeck; i.e., Adverbs (and Adverbial Phrases), Prepositions, Conjunctions, Interjections, and also the letters of the alphabet; as,

Les si et les mais. Les pour et les contre. Des a mal formés.

The ifs and buts. The pros and cons. Ill-shaped A's.

(2) Proper Names; as,

Les Corneille, les Molière, les Racine ont illustré le siècle de Louis XIV.

Corneille, Molière, Racine have given lustre to the age of Louis XIV.

Except a few which denote historical names of families: Les Tarquins, les Gracques, les Antonins, les Condés, les Guises, les Capets, les Bourbons, les Stuarts, etc.

(3) Foreign Nouns which have not been assimilated to French:-Les fac-simile; les post-scriptum.

See Appendix, for a full list of Nouns :-

(a) used in the Plural only.

(b) of foreign origin which do not change in the Plural.

(c) used with a different meaning in the Singular and in the Plural.

For Compound Nouns, see § 13.

(c) Nouns ending in -al or -ail change their ending into -aux:-

Singular.

Les chevaux, the horses. Leurs travaux, their works. Nationaux, national.

Le cheval, the horse. Leur travail, their work. National, national.

Obs. 1. The following Substantives in -al and -ail take -s:-

Les bals, dances; Les cals, callosities; Les attirails, gears; Les bercails, sheepfolds; (unusual in plur.) Les détails, details ;

les carnavals, carnivals; les chacals, jackals; les épouvantails, scarecrows; les éventails, fans; les gouvernails, rudders; les pals, stakes. les régals, treats. les mails, malls, mallets. les poitrails, breast-pieces. les portails, front gateways.

Obs. 2. The following in I have two forms for the plural, each with a different meaning :

l'aïeul, the grandfather; le ciel, the sky, heaven:

les aïeux, the ancestors; les cieux, the heavens, skies; les yeux, the eyes;

les aïeuls, grandfathers. les ciels, skies in pictures, climate, bed-testers. les cils (æils - de - bæuf), oval windows.

l'appât, the bait; le travail, the work;

l'œil, the eye;

les appas, the charms; les travaux, the works; les appâts, baits. les travails (t) reports (of a minister), (a) traves. les ails (botanical term).

l'ail, garlic;

les\_aulx(common plural); le bétail, cattle, has no plural; but bestiaux is used in the same sense.

#### § 13.—Formation of Compound Nouns (Substantifs COMPOSÉS).

#### (a) NOUN + NOUN.

#### (I) WITHOUT ARTICLE:

(a) in Apposition; the latter standing as a rule after the Noun it qualifies (exceptionally only before it-le chef-lieu, chief county-town): as,

la pierre-ponce, pumice-stone; le chou-fleur, cauliflower.

(β) In Genitive relation; with de expressed or understood; as. le chef-d'œuvre, masterpiece; le timbre-poste, postage stamp. l'huile d'olive, olive oil. l'arc de triomphe, triumphal arch; le chemin de fer, railway; l'encre de Chine, Indian ink.

#### (2) WITH de + DEFINITE ARTICLE:

le vent du nord, north wind; le droit des gens, international law.

#### Compare-

with Indefinite and Adjectival: Definite and Substantival, la tour de l'église, the tower of the church; une tour d'église, a church tower. le palais de la reine, the queen's palace; un port de reine, a queenly bearing. le jeu de l'enfant, the child's plaything; un jeu d'enfant, child's play. (3) LINKED BY & (without or with the Article), to denote aptness, destination, purpose, and especially the characteristic feature:

la pompe à incendie, fire-engine; le serpent & sonnettes, rattlesnake; le marché au blé, corn-market; une tarte à la crème, cream tart ; la poste aux lettres, letter post; la foire aux vanités, vanity fair.

le bateau à vapeur, steamboat. le moulin à vent, windmill. l'éclairage au gaz, gas lighting. chocolat à la vanille, vanilla chocolate.

#### Compare-

le verre à vin, the wine-glass; la tasse à thé, the tea-cup;

un verre de vin, a glass of wine. une tasse de thé, a cup of tea.

#### Compare also-

Definite and Substantival, with Indefinite and Adjectival: la boite aux lettres, letter-box; le papier à lettres, letter paper. le pot au lait, the pot in which the milk un pot à lait, a milk-pot. is kept;

(4) LINKED BY en, AND A FEW OTHER PREPOSITIONS: as, le général en chef, general in chief. l'arc-en-ciel, rainbow; Châlon-sur-Saône, Chalon on the Bachelier-es\*-lettres, Bachelor of Letters. Saone;

#### (b) NOUN + ADJECTIVE.

(I) the Adjective standing before the Noun: as,

le libre échange, free trade. le haut fourneau, the blast furnace. le grand-père, the grandfather. le bon marché, the bargain.

la grand'mère, the grandmother. le petit-fils, the grandson. la petite-fille, the grand-daughter. la chauve-souris, the bat. .

(2) the Adjective standing after the Noun: as,

le bal masqué, the masked ball. le nom propre, the proper Noun. la carte postale, the postcard.

le garde-champêtre, the rural guard le fer-blanc, the tin-plate. l'eau-forte, aqua-fortis.

#### (c) NOUN + VERB.

le porte-drapeau, standard-bearer. le marchepied, footstool, step. la chambre à coucher, bedroom. la poêle à frire, frying-pan.

l'abat-jour, lamp-shade. le garde-manger, meat-safe. la salle à manger, dining-room lamachine à coudre, sewing machine

<sup>\*</sup> ès is an archaic form of the contraction of en + les-

#### § 14.—Plural of Compound Nouns.

As a General Rule only Nouns and Adjectives are declinable; accordingly the sign of the Plural is added—

(a) to both components, if both are either substantival or adjectival:—

le chou-fleur, les choux-fleurs, the cauliflowers.

le cerf-volant, les cerfs-volants, the kites.

Exception: la grand'mère, les grand'mères, and a few other feminine Nouns compounded with grand'.

(b) to the first component only, if the other is governed by a preposition; (comp. man-of-war, Plur. men-of-war):-

le chef-d'œuvre, les chefs-d'œuvre, the masterpieces. l'arc-en-ciel, les arcs-en-ciel, the rainbows.

(c) to the **second** component only, if the first is an indeclinable part of speech (comp. rear-admiral, Plur. rear-admirals):\*—

le contre-amiral, les contre-amiraux, the rear-admirals. le sous-officier, les sous-officiers, the non-commissioned officers.

(d) to neither, if the compound is in apposition to another noun implied, and which alone would take the sign of the plural if it were expressed; thus réveille-matin is virtually an adverbial phrase qualifying the Noun horloge, clock, understood:—

le réveille-matin, les réveille-matin, the alarums. l'abat-jour, les abat-jour, the lamp-shades.

Obs. Garde may be either a Noun, and takes the sign of Plural, or a Verb, and remains unchanged, according to the General Rule:—

Le garde-champêtre, les gardes-champêtres, the rural guards. le garde-manger, les garde-manger, the safes, pantries, larders.

These rules do not apply to originally compound Nouns now written in one word (without hyphen); these, with the exception of gentilhomme (Plur. gentilshommes), follow the General Rule: as,

Le parapluie (lit. rain-screen), les parapluies, the umbrellas.

<sup>\*</sup>Un essuie-mains, des essuie-mains. If a component is plural in itself—though the whole compound may be singular—it always has the sign of the Plural; thus an essuie-mains is a towel for wiping the kands; un cure-dents, a pick for the

#### THE ADJECTIVE (L'ADJECTIF).

#### § 15.—Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives.

An Adjective agrees in Gender and Number with the Substantive it qualifies; to apply this rule it is necessary to know the different ways of forming the Feminine of Adjectives.

#### General Rule:-

Add -e mute to all Adjectives not specified further on, from (b) to(g): as,

m. Le fruit vert n'est pas mûr.

f. La pomme verte n'est pas mûre.

m. pl. Les fruits verts ne sont pas mûres.

f. pl. Les pommes vertes ne sont pas mûres.

Green fruits are not ripe.

Green apples are not ripe.

Green apples are not ripe.

Obs. 1.—Algu, f. alguë, acute; ambigu, f. ambiguë, ambiguous, to indicate that u is to be sounded distinctly, whilst without diæresis the u in -gue or -que is only the sign of a hard g or c, and is not sounded.

Obs. 2.—All those in -er, and most in -et, generally change e into è to indicate that the e has then a long and open sound:—

cher, chère, dear; le berger, la bergère, shepherdess.
complet, complète, inquiet, replet, replet, discrète, discrète.

#### § 16.—Special Rules:—

(a) Adjectives ending in -0 mute in the masc. form, remain unchanged; as,

Un\_ami fidèle est sincère (m.)
Une\_amie fidèle est sincère (f.)
Les\_amis fidèles sont sincères (m. pl.)
Les\_amies fidèles sont sincères (f. pl.)

Faithful friends are sincère.

(b) Adjectives ending in -x change this x into s, and add -e mute: as, L'or est un métal précieux (m.)

Le diamant est une pierre précieuse (f.)

Gold is a precious metal.

The diamond is a pre-

L'or est un des métaux précieux (m. pl.)

Cious stone.

Gold is one of the pre-

cious metals.

Les diamants sont des pierres précieuses (f. pl.)

The diamonds are precious stones.

Thus — jalou-x, -80, jealous; heureu-x, -80, happy, fortunate; silencieu-x, -80, silent, etc.

(c) Adjectives ending in -f change this f into  $\nabla$ , and add -e mute: as,

L'écolier attentif (m.) est récompensé.

L'écolière attentive (f.) est récompensée.

Les écolière attentifs (m. pl.) sont récompensés.

The attentive pupils

Les écolières attentives (f. pl.) sont récompensées.

are rewarded.

Thus—vif, vive, lively; neuf, neuve, new; juil, juive, Jewish, etc.

(d) Most Adjectives ending in -6 change this 6 into qu, and add -6 mute: as,

L'édifice public (m.) est utile.

The public edifice is useful.

L'autorité publique (f.) est respectée. The public authority is respected.

Les édifices publics (m.pl.) sont utiles. Public edifices are useful.

Les autorités publiques (f. pl.) sont respectées. Public authorities are

Les autorités publiques (f. pl.) sont respectées. Public authorities are Thus—ture, tur-qu-e, Turkish, etc. [respected. Thus also—long, f. longu-e, long, to indicate that g remains hard.

Obs In—grec, f. grecque, Greek, Grecian, the c is exceptionally retained.

(e) Adjectives ending in -ien, -el, -eil, -on, double their final consonant, and add -e mute: as,

Un usage ancien.
La langue ancienne.
Des usages anciens.
Les langues anciennes.

An old custom.
The ancient language.
Old customs.

Les langues anciennes. Ancient languages.
Thus—bon, bonne, good; Chrétien, Chrétienne, Christian;
oruel, cruel; pareil, pareille, like, etc.

Exceptions to (a)—(e). Fem. Fem Masc. blanche, blanc, white. épais, épaisse. thick. franc, franche, frank. gros, grosse, big. dry. exprès, sèche, expresse, express. sec, fresh. frais, fraiche, faux, fausse, false. roux, favori, favorite, favourite. rousse, red. benign. bénin, bénigne, doux, douce, sweet. tiers, malin, maligne, malignant. tierce, third. nulle, absoute, nul, no. absous, absolved. gentil, gentille, nice, pretty. muet, muette, mute, dumb. bas, basse, low. net, nette. clear, neat. gras, grasse, fat. sujet, sujette, subject. tired. sotte, lasse, sot, foolish.

(f) FIVE Adjectives have two forms for the Masc. Sing.: one used before a Noun beginning with a consonant, the other before a vowel or silent h. The Fem. of these is formed from the latter by doubling the final consonant, and adding 6 mute, see (e): as,

Le beau verger. The fine orchard. Le bel arbre (pl. les beaux arbres). the fine tree (trees). La belle prairie. the fine meadow. Le nouvell monde.

Le nouvel habit (pl. les nouveaux habits). the new coat (coats).

La nouvelle mode (année).

the new fashion (year).

The old heavar. f. Le vieux mendiant. The old beggar. m. Le vieil ami (pl. vieux amis). La vieille sorcière. the old friend (friends).
the old hag. f. Le fou rire.
Un fol espoir (pl. unusual). The irresistible (lit. foolish) a foolish hope. [laughter. Une folle entreprise. a desperate undertaking. Du fromage mou.
Un mol abandon (pl. unusual). Soft cheese. an indolent listlessness. Une molle oisiveté. a sluggish idleness.

also--

#### (g)—Nouns and Adjectives in -eur.

Nouns and Adjectives in -eur form their Feminine in four different ways (-eure, -euse, -rice, -eresse), viz.:-

(1) by adding -e mute to those ending in -érieur (implying an idea

of comparison)-

inférieur meilleur

inféri**eure** meilleure

inferior. hetter.

(2) by changing into -euse the ending of those formed from a Past Participle; as,

tromp-er, Pres. Part. tromp-ant; Adj. tromp-eur, f. tromp-euse. ,, flatt-eur, f. flatt-euse. flatt-er, ,, ,, flatt-ant;

(3) by changing into -trice the ending of those in -teur not comprised in (b) :=créateur créatrice creative.

(4) by changing into -eresse the ending -eur in the following exceptional cases (those marked \* are Law terms):-

vengeur vengeresse avenging. le chasseur, la chasseresse (in poetical style) huntress. \*le défendeur, \*la défenderesse defendant. \*le demandeur, \*la demanderesse plaintiff. l'enchanteur, l'enchanteresse enchanter. la pécheresse, sinner (pêcheur, fisherman, pêcheuse). \*la venderesse, vendor (vendeuse, seller). le pécheur, \*le vendeur,

#### § 17.—Alphabetical List of Adjectives which form their Feminine irregularly.

N.B.-Adjectives ending in -e mute (unchanged in the fem.), those in -f (f. -ve), in -x (f. -se), in -c (f. -que), in -eur (f. -euse or -eure), and those in -n (f. -nne), or -el, -eil (f. -elle, -eille),

	épaisse. expresse.	maltre, malin,	maltresse. maligne.	vieux,	-3-311000
doux,	douce.	long,	longue.	/ Acusear	Acukateno.
	, dominatrice.	las,	lasse.	traine,	TAILLESSE.
dissous,	dissoute.	Junicau,	Junence	tiers,	tience.
dispos,	no fem.	jumeau.	iumelle.	sujet,	sujette.
createur,	creatrice.	hébreu,	no fem.	sot,	sotte.
<i>no masc.</i> créateur.	crasse. créatrice.	gros,	grosse.	sec.	sèche.
coquet,	coquette.	grec,	grecque.	roux,	rousse.
coi,	coite.	gras,	grasse.	provocateur,	provocatioe.
châtain,	no fem.	gentil,	gentille.	profes,	professe. provocatrice.
brunet,	brunette.	(but, langu	e manque.		pécheresse.
blanc,	blanche.	franc,	franche.	1 -	-
bigot,	bigotte.	frais,	fraiche.	oblong,	oblongue.
bénin,	bénigne.	fou (fol),	folle.	nul,	nulle.
beau (bel),	belle.	fluet.	fluette.		vel),nouvelle
bas,	basse.	favori,	favorite.	net.	nette.
,	abboator	faux,	fausse.	muet,	muette.
absous.	absoute.	fat,	no fem.	mou (mol),	molle.
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
are not inclu	ided in this list.				
	(,, .				

### § 18.—Comparison of Adjectives (Comparaison des Adjectifs).

	I. Regular	:_
Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
forts strong, plus	forts forte stronger,	le plus fort les plus forts la plus forte les plus fortes strongest.
Comparisons may b	e divided into the	se of—
(a) Superiori	ty, (b) Equality, a	nd (c) Inferiority:—
	(a) SUPERIOR	ITY:
L'air est léger.	Positive.	Air is light.
2 441 000 108017	Comparat <b>iv</b> e	_
L'air est plus lé		Air is lighter than water.
m.s. Le gaz est le pl f.s. C'est la plus lég m.pl. Les gaz sont les f.pl. Ce sont les sub f.pl. Ce sont les plus	gère des substance plus légers des cor stances les plus lé	Gas is the lightest body.  It is the lightest substance.  ps. Gases are the lightest bodies.  gères. ) They are the lightest
	(b) Equalit	
	i bon que celui-là. ssi utile que cela.	This wine is as good as that.
	(c) Inferior	TTY:
Elle est moins j Elle n'est pas si	olie que sa sœur. i jolie que sa sœur	She is less pretty than (not so pretty as) her sister.
	II. Irregul	ar.
The following Adje the irregularities spring Positive.	ctives form their de g from the corresp Comparative.	egrees of comparison irregularly; sonding Latin forms:— Superlative.
Ce vin est bon;	celui-là est <b>meil</b> l	<u> </u>
This wine is good;	that is better;	it is the best.
Cette eau est bonne;	celle-là est meille	eure; c'est la meilleure.
This water is good;	that is better;	it is the best.
Ce vin est mauvais;	celui-là est { pire	; le pire. s mauvais; le plus mauvais.
This wine is bad;	that is worse;	the worst.
Ce cheval est petit;	il est plus petit;	c'est le plus petit.
This horse is small;	it is smaller;	it is the smallest.
Ce service est petit;	il est moindre qu	ne l'autre; c'est le moindre de tous.
This service is slight;	it is less than the	other; it is the slightest of
La distance est <b>petite;</b> The distance is short;	elle est moindre o	all. que l'autre; c'est la moindre. the other; it is the smallest.

#### NUMERALS (Adjectifs numéraux).

#### § 19.—Cardinal Numbers.

N.B.—This will serve at the same time as a repetition of the Plural of Nouns.

```
II onze années, eleven years.
 I m. un jour, one day.
f. une journée, one day's work.
2 deux ans, two years.
                                                    (le onze avril, April 11th.)
                                            12 douze apôtres, twelve apostles.
 3 trois mois, three months.
                                            13 treize fois, thirteen times.
                                            14 quatorse lieues, 14 leagues.
 4 quatre feux, four fires.
5 cinq clous, five nails.
6 six chevaux, six horses.
                                            15 quinze jours, a fortnight.
16 seize onces, sixteen ounces.
7 sept travaux, seven labours.
8 huit cerfs-volants, eight kites.
                                            17 dix sept jeux, 17 games.
                                            18 dix huit canaux, 18 canals.
                                            19 dix-neuf chefs-lieux, nineteen
 9 neuf timbres-poste, nine
                       postage-stamps.
                                                                    county towns.
                                           20 vingt choux-fleurs,
10 dix avant-coureurs, ten fore-
                                                                            twenty
                              runners.
                                                                      cauliflowers.
```

21	vingt et un (vingt-un).	90	quatre-vingt-dix.
22	vingt-deux, etc.	91	quatre-vingt-onze, etc.
30	trente.	100	cent.
40	quarante.	101	cent un (cent et un).
50	cinquante.	150	cent cinquante.
60	soixante.		deux cents.
69	soixante-neuf.		deux cent vingt.(1)
70	soixante-dix (soixante et dix).		mille (mil in dates A.D.): as,
71	soixante et onze.		mil huit cent quatre.
72	soixante-douze, etc.		dix mille.
80	quatre-vingts.	100,000	cent mille.(2)
18	quatre-vingt-un,(1) etc.	1,000,000	un million.

- (1) Quatre-vingts and cents (plural of cent) take no s (a) if followed by another numeral, as above, or (b) if used as an ordinal number: page deux cent quatre-vingt.
  - (2) Mille, thousand, never takes 8; but mille, mile, does:—dix mille, ten thousand; dix milles, ten miles.
- (3) Pronunciation.—In cinq, six, sept, huit, neuf, dix, the final consonants are pronounced when these numerals are standing alone or followed by an adjunct beginning with a vowel or silent h:—
  sounded:—cinq\_arbres, six\_heures, nous sommes sept (pron. "set"),

not sounded: -cinq plumes, six harengs, sept cents, dix francs.

#### § 20.—Ordinal Numbers.

Les premières hommes.

La première année.

Les premières années.

Observations:—

The first man.
The first men.
The first year.
The first years.

2nd Le second volume. The second volume. The second time. La **seconde** fois. Le deuxième étage. The second storey. La deuxième série. The second series. 3rd Le troisième mois. The third month. La troisième partie. The third part. 4th le (la) quatrième. 20th le (la) vingtième. 21st le (la) vingt-et-unième. 5th le (la) cinquième. 6th le (la) sixième. 22nd le (la) vingt-deuxième, etc. 30th le (la) trentième. 7th le (la) septième. 8th le (la) huitième. 100th le (la) centième. 9th le (la) neuvième. 10th le (la) dixième. 11th le (la) onzième. 1000th le (la) millième. le dernier, la dernière. last the last but one, l'avant-dernier.

FRENCH CARDINAL NUMBERS USED INSTEAD OF ORDINAL:-In speaking of the days of the month or Sovereigns (except the first): as, Le premier janvier. The 1st of Jan. Le deux février. The 2nd of Feb. The 8th of July. Le huit juillet. Le vingt-et-un août. August 21st. The 3rd of March. Le trois mars. Le vingt-deux septembre. Sep. 22. Le quatre avril. The 4th of April. Le vingt-trois octobre. Oct. 23rd. Le cinq mai. The 5th of May. Le trente novembre. Nov. 30th. The 6th of June. Le trente-et-un décembre. Dec. 31. Le six juin.

François premier, Francis the First; Henri deux (second), Henry II. Louis quatorze, Louis the Fourteenth.

Exceptionally: - Charles-quint, Charles the Fifth, Emperor of Germany; and Sixte-quint, Pope Sixtus the Fifth.

Observation.—In speaking of the pages, chapters, etc., of a book, we may say: chapitre dix, chapitre dixième, or, le dixième chapitre, etc.

§ 21.—Fractional § 22.–Proportional Numerals. § 23.—Multiplica-tive Numerals. Numerals. l un demi, la moitié, is subst. Il un *et demi*, une fois, once, deux fois, twice, trois fois, thrice, simple, simple, le double, double, le triple, treble, un tiers, un quart, le quadruple, fourquatre fois, fold, etc., times, etc., ł un cinquième, cinq fois, ł un sixième. le sextuple. six fois. d un septième, le septuple, sept fois, l un huitième, l'octuple, huit fois, ł un neuvième, (neuf fois autant) neuf fois. 🚠 un dixième. le décuple, dix fois. etc., → un onzième. (onze fois autant), onze fois. etc., r} un douzième, douze fois autant, douze fois, etc., etc., etc centuple, 100 fold.

§ 24.—Collective Numerals. The following only are used :une huitaine. about eight. une dixaine, about ten une douzaine. a dozen une quinzaine, about 15. une vingtaine, a score. une trentaine. about 30.
une quarantaine,
about 40. une cinquantaine, about 50. about 60. une centaine. about 100. un millier,

about roop.

four

#### PRONOUNS (PRONOMS).

# § 25.—Conjunctive Personal Pronouns.

General Rule.—A personal Pronoun in the Objective case is placed before its Verb, except in the Imperative used affirmatively: as,

# SINGULAR.

		200 2 0, 00,00	
Subj. Dir. Obj. Ind. Obj.	Vous Il	Je ne trompe personne.  me trompez.  me donne.	I deceive no one. You deceive me. He gives to me.

#### 2nd Person.

Subj.	,	Tu aimes tes amis.	Thou lovest thy friends.
Dir. Obj. 1	Elle 1	te salue.	She greets thee.
Dir. Obj. 1 Ind. Obj. 1	Elle 1	te répond.	She replies to thee.
•		_	-

# 3rd Person, Masculine, referring to a person.

Subj.		raconte une histoire.	He is relating a story.
Dir. Obj. T Ind. Obj. O	Tu le In lui	respectes. i raconte une fable.	You respect him. They relate a fable to him.
coj. C		· raconte une rabies	a mey result to juvic vo mani

#### 3rd Person, Feminine, relating to a person.

Subj.	Elle	e te pardonnera.	She will forgive thee.
Dir. Obj. (Ind. Obj. (	On la f On lui	félicite. répondra.	One congratulates her. One will reply to her.

#### PLURAL. 1st Person.

Subj.		<b>Nous</b> louons l'écolier.	We praise the pupil.
Dir. Obj.	On	nous loue.	They praise us.
Dir. Obj. Ind. Obj.	Qui	nous parle?	Who is speaking to us?
•	-	• • • •	

# 2nd Person.

Subj. Dir. Ohj. Ind. Ohi.	Ils Elles	Vous apprenez la leçon. vous suivront. vous répondront.	You learn the lesson. They will follow you. They will reply to you.
ma. Ooj.	Elles	vous repondront.	I ney will reply to you.

# 3rd Person, Masculine and Feminine.

Subj.	Ils (elles) l'estiment.	They esteem him.
Dir. Obj. Je Ind. Obj. Nous	les estime.	I esteem them.
Ind. Obj. Nous	leur écrirons.	We will write to them.

# 3rd Person, Masculine or Feminine, referring to a thing (sometimes also to a person).

Subj.	II* (elle) est très	utile. It is very useful.
Dir. Obj.	L'élève le (la) trouve fac	ile. The pupil finds it easy.
Ind. Obj.	L'élève s'y accoutume.	The pupil accustoms himself to it
- 3.	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	(to them).

Ind. Compl. Les élèves en parlent. † The pupils speak of it (of them).

<sup>\*</sup> Referring to, say, le travail, or la leçon; so plur., ils, elles, y, en.

The Genitive referring to a Person is supplied by the Disjunctive Personal Pronoun: de moi, de toi, de lui, d'elle; de nous, de vous, d'eux, d'elles.

#### THE VARIOUS USES OF en, y, AND neutral le :-

-En, hence; of it; from it; some, any (often not expressed in English), is used with reference to Antecedents denoting things:-

(I) Instead of de la, from there, hence, to denote the starting-point; as, Are you coming from London?—
I am (coming from there), and I am Viens-tu de Londres?— J'en viens, et j'y retourne. returning (there).

(2) Instead of de lui, d'elle, of it; d'eux, d'elles, of them, etc., with Verbs and Adjectives requiring de before their complement; as,

Est-il content de son sort?— Il en est content. Qu'en dites-vous?-Je n'en sais rien.

Is he satisfied with his fate?— He is satisfied with it. What do you say about it !-I don't know anything about it.

(3) Instead of de ceci, de cela, of it, of this, of that, referring to a phrase or sentence mentioned before; as,

Il fut trompé; il s'en aperçut. Vous vous en repentirez.

He was deceived; he was aware of it. You will repent of it (of this, of that).

(4) Instead of du, de la, des, some, any, of them, referring to a Noun-Antecedent used in a partitive sense; as,

A-t-il de l'argent?—Oui, il en a. Has he any money?— Yes, he has (some). Avez-vous des plumes?—

J'en ai de très bonnes.

En voici une meilleure. Je vous en donnerai une autre. Combien d'églises y a-t-il ici?—

Il y en a sept. Prenez-en. N'en prenez pas.

Have you any pens?-Yes, I have some very good ones. Here is a better one (of them). I will give you another (of them). How many churches are there here?— There are seven (of them). Take some. Don't take any.

(5) Instead of pour cela, pour cette raison, for that, on that

Je l'en estime davantage.

account; as,

I esteem him the more for it (i.e. on that account).

§ 27.—Y, there, thither, to it, at it, is used with reference to Antecedents denoting things:-

(1) Instead of la referring to a place mentioned before; as, Est-il à Paris ?-Oui, il y est. Allez-vous au bain?-Non, nous n'y allons pas. Vas-y aujourd'hui. N'y va pas demain.

Is he in Paris?—Yes, he is there. Are you going to the bath?-No, we are not going there. Go there to-day. Don't go there to-morrow.

(2) Instead of à lui, à elle; à eux, à elles; as,

Avez-vous répondu à sa lettre? — Have you replied to his letter? — I'Y ai répondu il y a huit jours. I replied to it a week ago. Renoncez-y! Renounce (to) it!

(3) Instead of a ceci, a cela, with reference to a preceding clause or phrase; as,

Y avez-vous contribué?— J'y ai contribué.

Have you contributed to this (to that)? I have contributed to this (to that).

#### § 28.—Le, the predicative form of the 3rd Person of the Personal Pronoun-

(1) takes the Gender and Number of its Antecedent, if this Antecedent is a Noun used definitely; as,

Etes-vous le maître de danse? - Are you the dancing master? Oui, monsieur, je le suis. Yes, sir, I am he.

Etes-vous la directrice du collège? - Are you the principal of the college? -Yes, madam, I am she

Oui, madame, je la suis. Etes-vous les délégués?— Are you the delegates ?-

Nous les sommes. We are.

But (2) remains unchanged, if its Antecedent is an Adjective, a Noun used Adjectively, or a whole sentence; as,

Es-tu malade?—Je le suis.

Etes-vous malades?—Nous le sommes.

Etes-vous directrice?—Je le suis.

A-t-il réussi?—Je le crois.

Are you ill?—I am. Are you ill?—We are. Are you a principal?-I am. Has he succeeded?—I think so.

# § 29.—Relative Position of Personal (Reflexive) Pronouns used Objectively.

When a Verb has two Pronoun-objects, one direct and the other indirect, they are both placed before the Verb in the following order:-

- (a) A Pronoun of the 1st or 2nd pers. stands before a Pronoun of the 3rd;
- (b) If both Pronouns are of the 3rd pers., the Direct (Accusative) stands before the Indirect (Dative); but 80 (reflexive) always stands first;
  - (c) Y and en after all other Pronouns; and en after y.

Thus, in answer to a question like-A qui donnera-t-il son couteau ? -To whom will he give his knife? the order will be:-

(a) 1st or 2nd before 3rd pers. -

to me (to thee). Il me (te) le donnera. He will give it to us (to you). He will give it Il nous (vous) le donnera.

(b) Direct before Indirect:—

to him (her). Il le lui donnera. He will give it

Il le leur donnera. He will give it to them.

but se first :-

He will reserve it for himself. Il se le réservera.

And so with the fem. sing., and plur. m. and fem.:-

(a) Il me la donne (her to me). Il me les donne (them to me).
(b) Il la lui donne (her to him). Il les lui donne (them to him).

(c) In answer to a question like—Qui forcera-t-il à cette condition?—

Whom will he compel to this condition? the order will be:—

In answer to a question like—A qui donnera-t-il du pain (de la viande; des cerises)?—To whom will he give bread (meat, cherries)? the order will be:—

In answer to such a question as—A-t-il trouvé de l'eau à la fontaine?—Has he found any water in the well? the order will be:—

Il y en a trouvé.

He has found some there.

#### RECAPITULATION.

```
Ist; 2nd; 3rd; 4th; 5th, and last.

me
te
(se)
nous
yous

2nd; 3rd; 4th; 5th, and last.

le
before la
les
before la
les
before en.
```

i.e. Those in the 1st col. always precede those in the 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 5th; those in the 2nd col. always precede those in the 3rd, 4th, and 5th; those in the 3rd col. precede those in the 4th and 5th, etc.

§ 30.—Pronoun-Object of a Verb in the Imperative Affirmative.

When the Verb is in the Imperative Affirmative, the order of words as given in the first rule (i.e. 1st and 2nd pers. before the 3rd) is reversed, i.e. the pronouns are placed after the Verb:—

the 3rd pers. (1e, la, les) standing before the pron. in the 1st or 2nd; and me, to are strengthened into moi, toi; as,

Donne-le-moi (le-nous). Give it Prête-la-moi (la-nous). Lend it Montrez-les-moi (les-nous). Show the

Give it to me (to us).

Lend it (lit. her) to me (to us).

Show them to me (to us).

In the other combinations the order remains the same:—

Dites-le-lui (le-leur).

Montrez-la-lui.

Montrez-la-leur.

Envoyez-les-lui (les-leur).

Conduisez-nous-y.

Donnez-m'en.

Tell it to him, or to her (to them).

Show it (lit. her) to him, or to her.

Show it to them.

Send them to him or to her (to them).

Take (lead) us there.

Give me some of it.

#### Compare—

with-Imperative Affirmative. Imperative Negative, Rendez-le-moi. Ne me le rendez pas. (Ne to le refuse pas ; [with reflexive Verbs only]. Refuse-le-toi.) (Ne vous y fiez pas. Fiez-vous-y.) " Ne le lui dites pas. Dites-le-lui. Ne nous en parlez pas. Parlez-nous-en, etc.

#### § 31.—Disjunctive Personal Pronouns.

DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS are so called because they are used independently of (disjoined from) the Verb: being uninflected, their case-relations, like those of Nouns, are indicated by de and a; they are used-

(1) If standing alone, especially in answer to a question; as, Qui a fait cela?— Moi. Who has done that?— I (have). Qui devra payer?—

Toi. Who will have to pay?—

Thou (will)

Qui est-ce qui viendra?—

Lui. Who will come?—

He (will).

Oui veut du vin?—

Nous. Who mast ame that?—

I (have).

Thou (will).

Thou (will). Thou (wilt) Qui veut du vin?— Nous. Who wants wine? We (do). Qui veut au vin :— Nous. Who wants unne : we (ao).
Qui traduira cette page ?— Yous. Who will translate this page ? You (will).
Qui nous conduira ?— Fux. Who will land us ?— They (m) They (m.)They (f.)Qui nous conduira?— Qui vous a dit cela?— Eux. Who will lead us?-Elles. Who has told you that?-Mon frère, ma sœur, et moi. My brother, sister, and myself. Ni lui, ni elle, ni moi. Neither he, nor she, nor I.

(2) As the second member of a comparison; as, Il est plus avancé que moi. He is more advanced than I. Elle n'est pas si active que toi. She is not so active as you.

(3) As the Antecedent of a Relative Pronoun; as, Moi, qui suis innocent! I, who am innocent!

(4) As the Predicative Complement of the Impersonal phrases c'est, ce sont, c'était ; as,

Ce n'est pas moi. Sera-ce lui ou un autre?

Lui, qui a tant travaillé!

It is not I. Will it be he or another?

He, who has worked so hard!

(5) After all Prepositions; as, Celui qui n'est pas pour moi est He who is not for me is against me. contre moi. Cela est à moi. Je suis chez moi aujourd'hui. Seras-tu chez toi demain? Il serait ches lui s'il pleuvait. Elle a été chez elle.

That belongs to me.

I am at home (i.e. my home) to-day. Shall you be at home to-morrow? He would be at home if it rained. She has been at home.

On est bien chez soi. Restons chez nous. Serez-vous chez vous? Qu'ils restent ches eux. Ces dames sont ches elles.

One is comfortable at home. Let us stay at home. Shall you be at home? Let them stay at home. These ladies are at home.

Obs. r. Thus after the Preposition à, used as the Adverbial Complement of a Verb of motion, and a few others:—accountumer à, to accustom to; en appeler à, to appeal to; courir (accourir) à, to hasten to; penser à, songer à, to think of; renoncer à, to renounce; venir à, to come to; as,

Pense à moi! Je pense toujours à toi. Elle accourut à lui. Nous songeons à eux jour et nuit. Think of me! I always think of thee.

She hastened towards him. We think of them day and night.

Obs. 2. For Personal Pronoun of the 3rd person followed by a Relative Pronoun (he who = celui qui), cf. Demonstrative Pronouns, § 33 (d).

# § 32.—Possessive Pronouns.

#### I. Possessive Adjectives.

A Possessive Adjective agrees in Gender and Number with the Substantive it qualifies; as,

#### SINGULAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	
I.	Mon frère et	ma*sœur.	My brother and my sister.
2.	Ton fils et	ta* fille.	Thy son and thy daughter.
3.	Son cousin et	sa* cousine.	His (her) cousin (m.), and his (or her) cousin (f.)
I.	Notre maître et	notre maîtresse.	Our master and our mistress.
2.	<b>Votre</b> oncle et	votre tante.	Your uncle and your aunt.
3.	Leur neveu et	leur nièce.	Their nephew and their niece.

PLURAL.				
<ol> <li>Mes frères et</li> <li>Tes fils et</li> <li>Ses cousins et</li> <li>Nos maîtres et</li> <li>Vos oncles et</li> <li>Leurs neveux et</li> </ol>	mes sœurs. tes filles. ses cousines. nos maîtresses. vos tantes. leurs nièces.	My brothers and sisters. Thy sons and daughters. His (her) cousins (m. and f.) Our masters and mistresses. Your uncles and aunts. Their nephews and nieces.		

<sup>\*</sup> Before a feminine Noun or Adjective beginning with a vowel or silent h—ma, ta, and sa are changed into mon, ton, son, for the sake of avoiding a hiatus, i.e. the unpleasant sound of two vowels in close succession; as,

Mon\_amie est plus discrète que ton\_amie. My friend (f.) is more discreet than your friend. His (her) coat is not new.

Son habit n'est pas neuf.

Compare the English:—a tree, an ass, an heir; though, of course, an in English is the original, and a the clipped, form.

#### II. Possessive Pronouns Proper.

```
m. Ton ami et le mien; tes amis et les miens. Thy friend (s) and f. Ta sœuret la mienne; tes sœurs et les miennes. Thy sister (s) mine.

m. Son fils et le tien; ses fils et les tiennes. His son(s) and f. Sa fille et la tienne; ses filles et les tiennes. His daughter (s) thine.

m. Ton chat et le sien; tes chats et les siennes. Thy flower(s) his.

f. Ta fleur et la sienne; tes fleurs et les siennes. Thy flower(s) his.

m. Leur toit et le nôtre; leurs toits et les nôtres. Their roof (s) and f. Leur poire et la nôtre; leurs poires et les nôtres. Their pear(s) ours.

m. Mon lit et le vôtre; mes lits et les vôtres. My bed(s) and f. Ma rose et la vôtre; mes roses et les vôtres. My rose(s) yours.

m. Votre âne et le leur; vos ânes et les leurs. Your ass(es) and f. Votre tante et la leur; vos tantes et les leurs.
```

The Rule of agreement with regard to Possessive Adjectives (§ 32, I.) also applies to Possessive Pronouns, i.e.—

A Possessive Pronoun takes the Gender and Number of the Noun or Pronoun denoting the Person or Thing possessed; whilst in English there is no agreement, except in the third person singular—his, her; which, however, refer to the gender of the Noun or Pronoun denoting the Possessor; as,

```
Mon frère a perdu son orayon (m.);

,,, sa plume (f.).

Mon ami a aussi perdu le sien (m.);
la sienne (f.).

Ma sœur a trouvé son erayon (m.);
,, sa plume (f.).

My sister has found her pencil.

My sister has found her pencil.

,, her pen.

My aunt has also found hers.
```

#### § 33.—Demonstrative Pronouns.

#### I. DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

#### SINGULAR-Masculine.

Ce chêne et ce 'hêtre. Cet\_été et cet\_hiver. This (that) oak and beech-tree. This (that) summer and winter.

#### SINGULAR-Feminine.

Cette lame et cette 'hâche.
Cette anecdote et cette histoire.
This blade and that axe.
This anecdote and that story.

The form of the Demonstrative Adjective is-

Ce \ before masculine Nouns \ beginning with a consonant.

Cot | singular | beginning with a vowel or silent h.\*

Cette before all feminine Nouns singular.

Ces before all masculine and feminine Nouns plural.

Obs. 1. The distinction between this and that, pl. these and those, is indicated by affixing cl or -là to the Noun: as,

Ce livre-ci et ce livre-là. Cet arbre-là et cet arbre-ci. Ces, arbres-ci et ces, arbres-là. Cette plume-ci et cette plume-là. Ces plumes-ci et ces plumes-là. This book (here) and that book (there).
That tree (there) and this tree (here).
These trees (here) and those trees (there).
This pen (here) and that pen (there).
These pens (here) and those pens (there).

# Synoptic Table of the Different Ways in which the same Noun may be limited.

#### Singular.

DEFINITE: the.	PARTITIVE: some, any.	Indefinite: a, an.	Possessive: my, etc.	DEMONSTRATIVE: this, that, etc.
<pre>m. le vin; ,, l'acier; f. la glace; ,, l'eau;</pre>	du vin ; de l'acier ; de la glace ; de l'eau ;	un vin; un_acier; une glace; une eau;	mon vin; mon_acier; ma glace; mon_eau;	ce vin. cet_acier. cette glace. cette eau.

#### Plural, the same for m. and f.; both before a consonant or a vowel.

les vins; les aciers;	des vins ;	des vins; des aciers;	mes vins; mes_aciers;	ces vins.
les glaces;	des glaces;	des glaces;	mes glaces;	ces glaces.
les eaux;	des eaux;	des eaux;	mes eaux;	

#### II. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS PROPER.

- (a) Ce, this, these; that, those; it, they; neutral (indeclinable) PRONOUN, is used as the Subject of the Verb être—
- (1) Demonstratively: answering to this, that; these, those; also as a Personal Pronoun answering to he, she, it, they; as,

Qui est-ce !—C'est lui. Ce sont mes seules récréations. Ce sont là des questions impossibles

Who is it !- It is he.

These are my only recreations.

These are questions impossible to solve.

à résoudre. Sont-ce là vos belles promesses?

Are these your fair promises?

Ce château, this castle; Cet, homme, this man; cet ancien château, this old castle.
ce brave homme, this worthy man.

<sup>\*</sup> If the Noun is preceded by a qualifying Adjective, use ce or cet, according as the Adjective begins with a consonant or vowel:—

## WHEN TO USE CE, AND WHEN IL:-

## I. Use co if the complement of être is—

#### (a) a Pronoun: -

C'est moi, toi, lui, elle. C'est nous, vous. Co sont eux, elles. C'est quelqu'un. Co n'est personne (rien). C'est à moi de (à) jouer. C'est le mien (le nôtre, etc.)

It is we, you. It is they (m. and f.) It is somebody. It is nobody (nothing). It is for me to play. It is mine (ours, etc.)

It is I (me); thou, he, she.

#### (b) a Proper Noun: -

C'est Jacques, Cécile. Ce sont Charles et Emilie. It is James, Cecilia. It is Charles and Emily.

(c) a Common Noun qualified by an Article or Adjective (possessive, demonstrative, or superlative) :-

C'est le (un, ce, mon) médecin. C'est la plus belle vue!

It is the (a, this, my) medical adviser. Co sont les (des, ces, mes) maîtres qui... It is the (these, my) masters, who ... It is the finest sight! They are the finest sights!

Ce sont les plus belles vues!

Obs. 1. If a Pronoun or Common Noun, thus qualified, is followed by a Relative Clause, the use of Ce is even more clearly demanded:—

C'est le maître qui est responsable. It is the master who is responsible.

See also II. (b).

Obs. 2. "It is" is often placed before a Noun for the sake of mere emphasis, in which case it always answers to c'est, ce sont, etc. It is the English (and not the Dutch)
Ce sont les Anglais (et non pas les that possess this colony.

Hollandais) qui possèdent cette colonie.

#### II. Use il if the complement of être is-

(a) a Common Noun used adjectively (which adjectival use can generally be seen by the absence of any qualifying term—Article or Adjective), cf. I. (c).

is a lawyer She is a governess by profession. They are lawyers They are governesses He (she) is a German by birth.

Il est avocat Elle est gouvernante de son état. Ils sont avocats de leur Elles sont gouvernantes ( Il (elle) est Allemand(e) de naissance.

(b) an Adjective proper, or an Infinitive governed by a, referring to following statement :-

It is evident that you are wrong. It is to be wished that it is true.

Il est *évident* que vous avez tort. Il est à désirer que cela soit vrai.

But if referring to a preceding statement, ce must be used: Vous avez tort, c'est évident. Est-ce visi?—C'est à désirer. You are wrong, it (i.e. that) is evident. Is that true?—It is to be hoped so.

#### (b) Ceci, this: and cela, that, are used—

(1) to denote things simply pointed at, but not mentioned (whilst celui denotes something mentioned before): as,

Ceci est bon, et cela est mauvais. Ceci est soie, cela est laine.

This is good, and that is bad. This is silk, that is wool.

(2) to refer to a statement:— \ \ \colon \colon \, if the statement follows; \ \colon \colon \, if it precedes: as,

Dites ceci de ma part à votre ami : "qu'il se tienne tranquille."

Tell your friend this from me: "Let him be quiet."

Que votre ami se tienne tranquille; dites-lui cela de ma part.

Your friend had better be quiet; tell him that from me.

(c) Celui-ci, this, this one; celui-là, that, that one. The difference in the use of celui, with or without -ci or -là, is this-

Celui-ci points to a nearer object :- this; ( not followed by any Celui-là points to a more distant object :- that; Complement : as,

Ce poisson-là est plus frais que Cette eau-là est plus fraiche que celui-ci (m.s.) That fish (water) is celle-ci (f.s.) fresher than this.

Ces arbres-là sont plus hauts que Ces tours sont plus hautes que

ceux-ci(m.pl.) | Those trees (towers) | are higher than these.

Ce poisson-ei est moins frais que Cette eau-ci n'est pas si fraiche que

This fish (water) is not so fresh as that. celui-là. celle-là.

Ces champs-oi sont plus beaux que Ces prairies-ci sont plus belles que

(are finer than coux-là. These fields celles-là. These meadows those.

Homère et Virgile sont de grands poètes: celui-ci était Romain, celui-là Grec.

Homer and Virgil are great poets: the latter was a Roman, the former a Greek.

(d) Colui refers back to a Noun mentioned before, and is followed by a Complement, whether it be an Attribute or an Adjective Clause: as,

Le port du Hâvre et celui de

Dieppe. Lequel?—Celui de mon ami. Ta version et celle que je finis.

Celui qui est content est heureux. Celle qui aura fini la première sera récompensée.

Coux qui | persévèrent réussiront.

The port of Havre and that (the one) of Dieppe.

Which?—My friend's.
Your translation and that (the one) which I finish.

He who is content is happy. She who has done first will be rewarded.

Those (they) who persevere will succeed

# § 34.—Interrogative Pronouns.

# I. What? Which? used Adjectively:-

Quel capitaine commandait?

Quels arbres croissent ici? Quelle affaire vous occupe? Quelles inquiétudes vous rongent? Quelle plume voulez-vous? Quelle plume parles-tu? A quel homme cela est-il? What (which) captain was in command?
What trees grow here?
What concern engrosses you?
What cares prey upon you?
What is your age?
Which pen do you want?
Of which man are you talking?
To what man does that belong?

#### II. (a) Who? used Substantively:-

Subj. Qui (1) a fait cela?
Dir. Obj. Qui (2) inviterez-vous?
Indir. (De qui parle-t-il?
Compl. (De qui est-il frère?
Indir. (A qui écrivez-vous?
Obj. (A qui est ce domaine?

Who has done that?
Whom shall you invite?
Of whom does he speak?
Whose brother is he?
To whom are you writing?
Whose is this estate?

#### (b) Which? used Substantively:— Singular.

Subj. Lequel (laquelle) (3) de vous ira?

Dir. Obj. Lequel (laquelle) choisirez-vous?

Indir. Duquel (de laquelle) de ces

Compl. esclaves parlez-vous?

Indir. Auquel (à laquelle) de ces élèves

Obj. parlez-vous?

Which of you will go?
Which shall you choose?
Of which of these slaves are
you speaking?
To which of these pupils are
you speaking?

#### Plural.

Subj. Lesquels (lesquelles)? | Ind. Compl. Desquels (desquelles)? | Dir. Obj. Lesquels (lesquelles)? | Indir. Obj. Auxquels (suxquelles)?

- (1) Or emphatically—Qui est-ce qui a fait cela?
- (2) Notice that the Objective form of qui, relative pronoun, is que.
- (3) Or, Plural—lesquels, lesquelles, auxquelles, etc. To single out one or more objects from a number, lequel, laquelle, etc., must be used for which?

#### (c) What? used Substantively:—

Subj. Qu'est-ce qui vous afflige? What grieves you? Que ferai-je? What am I to do? Qu'est-ce que vous voulez? Dir. Obj. What do you want? What are you talking of Indir. De quoi parlez-vous? Compl. (about)? Ind. Obj. What is that good for ? A quoi cela sert-il?

Que! refers to things, and as Subject is used with Impersonal Verbs only. After Prepositions que is changed into qual.

#### § 35.—Relative Pronouns.

#### I. RELATIVE PRONOUNS PROPER.

A RELATIVE PRONOUN agrees with its Anticedent in Gender, Number, and Person; in Case it agrees with the construction of its own clause; but only lequel (not qui) has special forms for both mass. and fem., singular and plural.

#### (a) QUI REFERRING TO PERSONS.

#### SINGULAR-Masculine and Feminine.

Subj. L'ami (l'amie) qui travaille.

D. O. L'ami (l'amie) que¹ j'estime.

Poss. L'ami (l'amie) dont³ l'enfant est ici.

Com. L'ami (l'amie) dont³ (de qui) je parle.

The friend whom² I esteem.

The friend whom² I esteem.

The friend whom² I esteem.

The friend of whom I speak.

The friend to whom I am

Obj. { L'amie à qui (auquelle } parle.

speaking.

#### PLURAL-Masculine and Feminine.

Subj. Les amis (amies) qui travaillent.

D. O. Les amis (amies) que¹ ¡'estime.

Poss. Les amis (amies) dont³ les enfants...

Com. Les amis (amies) dont³ je parle.

I. Les amis

à qui (auxquelle) je parle. } The friends whom I speak.

J. Les amies

à qui (auxquelle) je parle. } I speak.

#### (b) QUI, REFERRING TO ANIMALS AND THINGS.

# SINGULAR-Masculine and Feminine.

Subj. Le livre (la lettre) qui est là.

D.O. Le livre (la lettre) que¹ je lis.

Poss. Le livre (la lettre) dont⁴ la fin...

I. C. Le livre (la lettre) dont⁵ je parle.

I. O. { Le livre auquel } cela se I. O. { La lettre à laquelle} } cela se The book to which } that The letter to which } refers.

The book (letter) which is there.

The book (letter) of which is there.

The book (letter) which is there.

PLURAL-Masculine and Feminine. Subj. Les livres (lettres) qui sont lu(e)s. The books (letters) which are read. D.O. Les livres (lettres) que je lis. The books (letters) which I read. [end... Poss. Les livres (lettres) dont<sup>5</sup> la fin... The books (letters) of which the I. C. Les livres (lettres) dont je parlais. The books (letters) of which I spoke. Z. O. Les livres auxquels cela se les lettres auxquelles réfère. The books to which \ that The letters to which \ refers.

```
Observations
```

- (1) Qu'instead of que before a vowel or silent \$\hat{k}:\toqu'il, qu'elle, etc.
  (2) Governed by a Preposition, whom, always = qui, and never que;
  (3) Or, but less usual, masc. duquel, desquels; fem. de laquelle, desquelles.
  (4) Or—la fin duquel (de laquelle); but not "de qui."
  (5) Or—la fin desquels (desquelles); but not "de qui."
  (6) Or—duquel (de laquelle) parle; but not "de qui."
  (7) Or—desquels (desquelles) je parle; but not "de qui."

And so with all other Prepositions: (1) Referring to Persons. (2) Referring to Things.

L'homme avec qui (or lequel), with whom.. L'amie par qui (or laquelle), by whom...
Les ennemis contre qui, or lagainst
Les ennemis contre lesquels whom...
Les amies pour qui, or les amies pour lesquelles for whom.

Le clou avec lequel....

The nail with which.... La ville par laquelle, through which...
Les courants contre lesquels...
The currents against which...
Les affaires pour lesquelles...
The affairs for which...

(c) Lequel, Laquelle, who, which, that.

SINGULAR-Masculine and Feminine.

Sub. { L'ami de Jean lequel\* } est malade. John's friend (m.) } who L'amie d'Anne laquelle } est malade. John's friend (f.) } is ill.

Ind. { L'ami duquel (de qui) } je parle. Cpl. { L'amie de laquelle (,,) } The friend of whom I speak.

Ind. { L'ami suquel (or à qui) } je parle. Obj. { L'amie à laquelle (,,) } je parle. The friend to whom I speak.

#### PLURAL-Masculine and Feminine.

Sub. { Les amis de J. lesquels\* } sont ici. John's friends(m.) } who Les amies de J. lesquelles } sont ici. Jane's friends (f.) } are here.

Ind. { Les amis desquels (de qui) } je parle. The friends of whom I speak. Cpl. { Les amies desquelles (,,) }

Obj. Les amies auxquelles } je parle. The friends to whom I speak.

(d) Où, where, is often used as a Relative Pronoun instead of dans lequel, auquel, vers lequel, and with other Propositions: as,

Le temps où nous vivons. Au moment où je vous parle.

The times in which we live. At the moment at which I am speaking to you.

Le but où il tend. Les endroits par où nous passons.

The aim to which he tends. The places through which we are

passing. Le mauvais pas d'où il s'est tiré. The scrape out of which he has got.

Obs. z. As dont is virtually de qui, it follows that it is used with any Noun, Adjective, or Verb, governing de:—

L'écolier dont je suis content. L'es un accident dont je suis fâché.
La famille dont il sort.
Le succès dont ils se réjouissent.
La manière dont il s'y prend.

The pupil with whom I am satisfied. It is an accident for which I am sorry. The family from which he descends.
The success at which they rejoice.
The manner in which he sets about it.

<sup>\*</sup> In the Nom. lequel, laquelle, etc., is as a rule only used to avoid ambiguing.

The Accusative is exactly the same as the Nominative, and is rather unusual.

The same rule holds good with respect to en (§ 26); compare—
Es-tu content de cet élève?— C'est un élève dont je suis content.
Est-il fâché de cet accident?— C'est un accident dont il est fâché.
Se réjouit-il de ton succès?— C'est un succès dont il se réjouit.
Il s'en réjouit.

CAUTIONS.—(I) After whose, the Direct Object is placed before the Verb in English, whilst in French it keeps its usual place after the Verb, and retains the Definite Article: as,

S. L'ami dont le conseil est précieux.

The friend whose advice is precious.

D.O. L'ami dont je suis le conseil.

The friend whose advice I follow.

I.O. L'ami au conseil duquel je me soumets.

The friend to whose advice I submit.

(2) In French neither the Relative Pronoun nor the Conjunction que can ever be omitted, as is frequently done in English:—

The book I am reading. I know he has come.

Le livre que je lis. Je sais qu'il est venu.

(3) The Preposition which governs a Relative or Interrogative Pronoun, is never placed at the end of the sentence, as is frequently done in English:—

The house I live in.

La maison dans laquelle je demeure.

Where does he come from?

D'où vient-il?

#### II. RELATIVE PRONOUNS USED ABSOLUTELY.

Whenever what, which, that which, are not used with reference to a Definite Noun or Pronoun, but with reference to a *Phrase* or a whole clause, they are rendered thus:—

#### (a) Without Pretosition-

Subj. That is what annoys me. He says he is ill, which is true. C'est (or, voilà) 00 qui me vexe. Il dit qu'il est malade, 00 qui est vrai.

Dir. Compl. I know what you are.

Dir. Obj. That is what I believe.

He says he is ill, which

I don't believe.

Je sais ce que vous êtes.

C'est (voilà) 00 que je crois. Il dit qu'il est malade, ce que je ne crois pas.

#### (b) With a Preposition—

Ind. Obj. That is what I devote myself to.
That is what I speak of.

Indir.

Compl.
That is a point in which
we do not agree.

C'est (voilà) à quoi (ce à quoi)
je m'applique.
C'est (voilà) de quoi (ce dont) je
parle.
C'est (voilà) en quoi nous ne
sommes pas d'accord.

In the same manner, Why? being the same as What for? we say, Je sais pourquoi il vient.

# § 36.—Indefinite Pronouns.

#### (a) Used Adjectively :-

#### Masculine.

Un avis certain, reliable intel-Des avis certains, ( ligence. chaque jour, every (each) day. maint(-s) homme(-s), many a man. le même mois, the same month. les mêmes jours, the same days. quelque(-s) jour(-s), some day(s).\* un point quelconque, any point. deux points quelconques, any two points.

#### Feminine.

Une nouvelle certaine, ) reliable Des nouvelles certaines, \ news. Un certain nombre, acertain number. Une certaine époque, acertain time. chaque année, every (each) year. maint-e(-es) fois, many a time. la même chose, the same thing. les mêmes choses, the same things. quelque(-s) nuit(-s), some night(s). une ligne quelconque, any line. deux lignes quelconques, any two lines.

#### (b) Used either Adjectively or Substantively:-

# (1) Adjectively.

aucun soin, no care. aucune envie, no mind. un autre ton, another tone. une autre fois, another time. d'autres fois, other times. l'un et l'autre élève, both pupils. l'une et l'autre saison, both seasons, l'un ou l'autre parti, either party. ni l'un ni l'autre parti, neither party. ni l'un ni l'autre, neither. Nous autres Français. We Frenchmen! Vous autres! You fellows! (emphatic).

tout homme, every man. toute créature, every creature. tout le monde, everybody. toute la ville, the whole town. tous les hommes, all men. toutes les occasions, allopportunities. Tous les deux, both. m. plusieurs cas, several cases. f. plusiours fois, several times. Un tel éclat, such an uproar. me telle vie, such a life. de tels actes, such acts.

#### (2) Substantively.

aucun de ses amis, | none of his aucune de ses amies, | (her) friends. l'autre, the other. un autre, another. les autres, the others; d'autres, others l'un et l'autre sont ici. Both are here. les uns et les autres. All of them. l'un ou l'autre, either.

Tout ou rien, all or nothing.

Est-ce là tout? Is that all?

Toustsont coupables, all are guilty. Plusiours d'entre eux, ) several Plusiours d'entre elles, amongthem. Tel menace qui tremble. Many aone who threatens is himself afraid. Monsieur un tel. Mr. so and so.

<sup>\*</sup> Adverbial:-quel que soit son pouvoir, whatever his power may bet The s of tous used Substantively is sounded.

de telles actions, such actions.

Nul usage, no custom. nulle part, nowhere.

(c) Used Substantively only:-Le bien d'autrui (not used as Sub- Other people's property. ject or Dir. Obj.)

Chacun(-e) (no plur.) a ses défauts. Ces crayons coûtent un franc chacun. These pencils cost a franc each.

On dit. On me l'a dit. On vous demande.

A-t-on sonné? On frappe.

Si l'on nous entendait!

Personne n'est-il venu?-Non, personne n'est venu. No le dites à personne. Je doute que personne le sache. Y a-t-il personne d'assez hardi?

Il y a quelqu'un à la porte. Quelqu'un (personne) m'a-t-il de- Has any one inquired after me?

Voulez-vous des citrons (oranges)?— Do you want lemons (oranges)? Donnez-m'en quelques-uns (quel- Give me a few. ques-unes).

Rien n'est plus nécessaire. Il ne fait rien du tout. Cela ne fait rien. Y a-t-il rien de si beau? N'y a-t-il rien de nouveau? Qui vous reproche rien? Vit-on jamais rien de pareil?

Quiconque désobéira sera puni.

Qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela. *Te n'y ai trouvé qui que ce soit.* Quoi (= quelque chose) que vous fassiez.

Mesdames telles et telles. The ladies so and so.

Nul n'est exempt de mourir. one is exempted from death.

Everybody has his faults. Ces huîtres coûtent dix sous chacune. These oysters cost five pence each.

It is said. I am (have been) told. Some one asks for you. You are wanted.

Has there been a ring? There is a knock.

If anybody were to hear us!

Has nobody (no one) come? No, nobody has come. Don't tell it to anybody. I doubt if anybody knows it. Is there anybody bold enough?

There is somebody at the door.

Nothing is more necessary. He does nothing at all. That does not signify (matter). Is there anything so fine? Is there nothing new? Who reproaches you with anything? Has one ever seen anything like it?

Whosoever disobeys will be punished.

Whoever he be that has done that. I did not find anybody. Whatever you do.

#### § 37. - ADVERBS (LES ADVERBES).

Adverbs are classified according to meaning into-

(a) Adverbs of Place :-

Où est-il?—Il est ici (là).

Pronominal:-Il y est.

Ou vas-tu?—Je vais là.

Pronominal: -J'y vais.

D'où viens-tu?—Je viens de là. Pronominal:—J'on viens.

Te viens de chez moi.

Par où iras-tu?—

J'irai par ici ou par là.

Je le croyais dedans, il est dehors.

Votre maison me platt mieux en dedans qu'en dehors.

Voyez sur la table, cherchez dessus et dessous.

Passez par-dessous.

Il a un habit et un manteau par-

Au-dessus, étaient écrits ces mots:

Comme nous l'avons dit ci-dessus. Est-il derrière ou devant !— Il est bien loin.

(b) Adverbs of Time:—
Est-il déjà arrivé?—
Non, il n'est pas encore arrivé.
Il arrivera demain;
Et nous après-demain.
Où étiez-vous hier (au) soir?—
Et avant-hier?—
C'est aujourd'hui la foire.
Autrefois; maintenant.
Tôt; bientôt.

(c) Adverbs of Quality:—
Combien de laine? how much wool?
Trop de laine, too much wool.
Beaucoup d'argent, much money.
Peu d'argent, little money.

Where is he?—He is here (there).

He is there(i.e. the place mentioned).

Where are you going?—I am going there (thither).

Where do you gone from?—

Where do you come from?—

I am coming from there (thence).

I am coming from home.

Which way shall you go?—

I shall go this way or that way.
I thought he was in, he is out.
Your house pleases me better inside

than outside.

Look on the table, search on it and

below it.

Pass underneath.

He has a coat and a cloak over it.

Above, the following words were written:

As we have mentioned above. Is he before or behind?—
He is a long way off.

Has he already arrived?—
No, he has not.
He will arrive to-morrow;
And we the day after to-morrow.
Where were you last night?—
And the day before yesterday?
To-day is the fair.
Formerly; now.
Early; soon.

Combien d'ânes? how many asses?
Trop d'ânes, too many asses.
Beaucoup d'amis, many friends.
Peu d'amis, sew friends.

Plus de fromage, more cheese, Moins de fromage, less cheese. Autant d'or, as much gold.

Pas tant d'or, not so much gold.

Assez de fer, iron enough. Pas de richesse, no wealth. Plus de cerises, more cherries. Moins de cerises, fewer cherries.

Autant de corbeilles, as many baskets.

Pas tant de corbeilles, not so many baskets.

Assez d'épingles, pins enough. Point de richesse, no wealth at all.

(d) Adverbs of Manner or Quality:-

Comment yous portez-yous?-How do you do?-Je me porte très bien, comme vous I am very well, as you see. voyez.

J'en suis **fort** aise.

Il s'est conduit

Il est venu tout exprès, plutôt que de vous faire attendre.

Il aurait dû venir plus tôt.

Il est tant soit peu égoïste.

Il a obtenu le premier prix !—Ah, vraiment?

I am very glad of it.

He has come on purpose, rather than keep you waiting.

He ought to have come sooner.

He is rather selfish.

He has won the first prize!—Has he?

(e) Adverbs of Manner, derived regularly from Adjectives:— Adverbs are formed by-

Cette plante est très rare. On la trouve très rarement. Sa conduite a été

sage. sagement.

(I) adding -ment to Adjectives ending in a vowel: as, This plant is very rare. One very rarely finds it. His conduct has been good. He has behaved well.

· (2) Adding -ment to the feminine form of Adjectives ending in a consonant: as,

Adj. m. franc, f. franche. Il parle franchement. Adj. m. heureux, f. heureuse. Vivre hourousement.

Candid.

He speaks candidly. happy; fortunate, lucky. To live happily.

(3) Changing into -mmeut the ending -nt of Adjectives in -ant or -ent\* (i.e. assimilating the dentals -nt to the labial m): as,

Péril instant. Prier instamment. Le renard est prudent. Il agit prudemment.

Imminent (urgent) peril. To beseech urgently. The fox is cautious. He acts cautiously.

Except—lentement, slowly; présentement, presently; véhémentement, vehemently, which do not change -nt into -m.

Adverbs of Affirmation and Negation :-

(a) Used Disjunctively, i.e. independently of a Verb :-Es-tu malade?—Oui (je crois que oui). Are you ill?—Yes (I think so). Tu n'es pas malade, n'est-ce pas !-Si (je te dis que si).\* Vous payera-t-il?-Non (je crois que non). Es-tu prêt?-Point du tout.

You are not ill, are you?-Yes, I am (I tell you I am). Will he pay you?-No (I think not). Are you ready?-Not at all. I am hungry; are you?-Not I.

# Anomalies.

I. The following change the e mute of the Adjective into é:-

aveuglément, blindly; commodément, comfortably; communément, commonly; conformément, conformably; confusément, confusedly; énormément, enormously; expressément, expressly; immensément, immensely;

J'ai faim; et toi?—Pas moi.

importunément, importunately; obscurément, obscurely; opiniâtrément, obstinately; précisément, precisely; profondément, profoundly; profusément, profusely; uniformément, uniformly.

2. The following take a circumflex on the final vowel of the Adjective :assidument, assiduously; dument, duly;

crument, crudely;

gaiment, gaily.

3. Adjective, gentil, f. gentille, ,, bref, brief, f. brève, briève, Adverb = gentiment; ,, = brièvement.

4. vite is both Adjective and Adverb; vitement is only used in familiar language :-

> Adj. Il a la main fort vite. Adv. Courez vito (or, familiarly, vitement).

Obs. Adjectives used adverbially without changing :-

Obt. Adjectives used accertifiation; parler bas, haut. tenir bon; sentir bon, mauvais. voir (parler) clair. scheter (vendre, coûter) cher. couper court, demeurer court. marcher droit; se tenir droit. faire (venir, etc.) exprés. chanter faux, juste. tenir ferme; frapper ferme. deviner (frapper) juste. raisonner (viser) juste.

to speak low, aloud.
to kold out; to smell nice, bad.
to see clearly; to speak plainly.
to buy (sell) dear; to cost a great deal.
to cut short; to stick fast.
to cut shord; to stick fast.
to go ahead; to stand straight.
to do (to come, etc.) on purpose.
to sime out of time; in true. to sing out of tune; in tune, to hold firm; to hit hard.
to guess (to hit) right.
to reason (to aim) well.

<sup>&</sup>quot; Si is used instead of out in answer to a negative question

# § 38.—Irregular Formation of the Degrees of Comparison of Adjectives and Adverbs.

<u>i</u>56.

,	. Positive.	Comparati
Ad).	Son écriture est bonne	La vôtre est meilleure
Adv.	His writing is good.  Elle écrit bien.	Vous écrivez mieux.
_	She writes well.	You write Detter.
( Adj.	Adj. Sa prononciation est mauvaise.	.La vôtre est plus mau

His pronunciation is bad.

Le remède est mauvais.

He pronounces badly.

Il prononce mal.

Ils se conduisent mal.

Adv. Adj.

They behave badly. This sum is small.

The remedy is bad.

La vôtre est plus mauvaise.

Ils sont pis que jamais ensemble. It is worse than the disease. Il est pire quel le mal. Il prononce plus mal. He pronounces worse. Yours is worse.

They are on worse terms than ever. Elle est moindre que l'autre. Il parle moins que vous. He speaks less than you. It is less than the other.

Cette somme est petite.

Adj.

Il parle pon. He speaks but little. Ce cheval est petit.

Il parle le moins de tous.

It is the least of all.

He speaks least of all.

C'est le plus petit. It is the smallest.

Elle travaille plus que personne. Il est plus petit que le mien. It is smaller than mine.

She works harder than anybody. Il en a plus que moi. He has more than I.

Celle-là est la moilloure. Superlative. Charles écrit le mieux. That is the best.

La sienne est la plus mauvaiso. Elle prononce le plus mal. Charles writes best. His is the worst.

C'est la moindre de toutes. She pronounces worst C'est le pire de tous. It is worst of all.

C'est lui qui travaille le plus. It is he who works the most.

C'est lui qui en a le plus. He has the most.

Il en a davantage. He has more.

J'ai beaucoup d'argent. I have much money.

He works much (hard)

Il travaille beaucoup.

This horse is small.

#### EXERCISES.

N.B.—Words in round brackets ( ) to be inserted.

Words in square brackets [ ] to be omitted,

I.—RECAPITULATION OF THE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS, AND OF AUXILIARY VERBS.

#### Première Leçon. Présent de l'Indicatif.

Here learn the Present Indicative of avoir, p. 4; of être, p. 6; and of the Regular Conjugations, pp. 8-9.

A. I. Avez-vous beaucoup, à faire aujourd'hui?

2. N'êtes-vous pas fatigués de cette lecture?

~3. Vous *parlez* comme un perroquet.

4. Vous ne remplissez pas vos devoirs!

5. Pourquoi ne descendezvous pas? Oui, mon cher ami, j'ai un thème français à copier, et une version latine à finir.

Mais non, nous ne sommes pas fatigués de lire.

Nous parlons donc comme vous.

Nous les *remplissons* aussi bien que vous.

Nous ne descendons jamais avant huit heures.

DRILL: (1) Write out in three parallel columns the Present Indic. of—demander, to ask; choisir, to choose; attendre, to wait.

(2) Conjugate in all persons sing. and plur. of the Pres. Indic. of— J'aime mon frère et ma sœur. J'obéis à mes parents. (Il attend son ami), mais je n'attends pas le mien; from mais only. The Possessive Adjective or Pronoun to be put in the same person as the Subject.

· (3) Put all the sentences contained in A. in the singular.

CAUTION.—Remember that there are no special forms in French, as there are in English, to express continuous action in the Present; cf. Table of Tenses, p. 18.

B. I. Is he not tired of his long journey?—No, he is not tired at all. 2. Have they a Latin exercise to translate?—Yes. 3. We love our country and you love yours. 4. We cherish our parents and you cherish yours. 5. We defend our friend and you defend yours. 6. Do wait a minute (moment)!—I never wait. 7. How do you spend your time at the seaside?—I eat shrimps and pick up shells. 8. Stay at home and finish your Greek translation. 9. I am shutting my windows, and our neighbours are shutting theirs. 10. (The) looking-glasses (mirrors) reflect the image of (the) objects.

# Deuxième Leçon. Impératif et Répétition du Présent.

Here learn the Imperative of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs, pp. 4-6, and pp. 10-11.

A. 1. N'ayez pas peur!

2. Soyes le bienvenu (la bienvenue)!

3. Qu'ils (elles) soient les bienvenus(-es) ici !

4. Ne *parlez* donc\* pas si haut!

5. Entrez donc, \*messieurs!

6. Sonnez le garçon!—Avez-vous sonné, monsieur?

7. Choisissez bien vos amis!

8. Attendez-moi donc un moment!

9. Alors ne m'attendez pas!

Mais, je n'ai pas peur du tout.

Je vous remercie de votre bon accueil.

Et qu'ils (elles) aient confiance en nous!

Et vous, soyez donc tranquille!

Eh bien, entrons!

Oui, apportez-nous deux tasses de café et deux verres à vin.

Vous avez raison, et conservons-les!

Je n'attends jamais plus de cinq minutes.

Eh bien, adieu! ou plutôt, au revoir!

\* The Adverb done, then, is often used emphatically in the sense of the English auxiliary do; as, Ayez done patience!—Do have patience!

CAUTION.—Many Verbs which in English require a preposition before their complement, are used without preposition in French; i.e., they govern a direct Object (Accusative); as, chercher, to look for; demander, to ask for; attendre, to wait for (to expect); écouter, to listen to; regarder, to look at; rencontrer, to happen to meet with, etc.; and vice versa, many English transitive Verbs require a preposition in French: ober à, to obey; entrer dans, to enter; pardonner à, to forgive, etc.

DRILL: Put all the sentences in A. in the Singular.

B. 1. Let us wait another minute. 2. Do not touch that with your clumsy fingers! 3. Let us look at this picture; and let us admire it (= le)! 4. Let her come in, she is welcome at our fireside. 5. Let him listen to the advice of his trusty friends. 6. What are you looking for?—I am looking for my little dog. 7. Stay at home till noon, and finish your Greek translation. 8. What is he asking for?—He is asking for a piece of bread. 9. Tell us a pretty story, grandmother!

# Troisième Leçon. Différentes constructions interrogatives.

Here learn the Interrogative and Negative forms of Conjugation, p. 15.

A. (I.) The Subject a Personal Pronoun.

(a) Simple Interrogation:—

r. Aimez-vous votre patrie? Nous l'aimons de tout or, Est-ce que vous aimez, etc. notre cœur.

2. Avez-vous jamais été à Non, nous n'y avons jamais été.

(b) Relative Interrogation, i.e., introduced by an interrogative Pronoun or Adverb:—

3. De quoi parlez-vous? Nous parlons de la pluie et du beau temps.

4. Pourquoi n'agissez-vous Nous ne sommes pas pas ? pressés.

(II.) The Subject a Noun; (a) Simple Interrogation:—
5. Votre élève apprend-il Non, il ne l'apprend pas sa leçon?

encore.

6. Le train est-il déjà Oui, il y a un quart arrivé?

(b) In *Relative* Interrogation, two constructions are admissible, if the simple Verb has *no complement*, or is reflexive:—

7. Combien coûtent ces pêches? Elles coûtent trois Combien ces pêches coûtent-elles? Sous chacune.

but: Où votre ami a-t-il fini ses études? (and not "où a votre ami," etc.), because the Verb has an object.

8. Où cet accident est-il arrivé? or \ Il est arrivé à la Où est-ce que cet accident est arrivé? \ gare de Lyon.

CAUTION.—Never put the interrogative Pronoun or Adverb in the middle of the sentence.

DRILL: Put the sentences I-4, 7-8 in the Singular; 5 and 6 in the Plural.

B. 1. Where is your little brother?—At school. 2. Does your watch gain or lose?—It gains. 3. How much does it gain?—A quarter of an hour. 4. How old is your father?—He is seventy-two (years). 5. Why are you late this morning?—My watch loses half an hour. 6. When does your friend expect his sister?—In a fortnight. 7. How does the professor explain this passage? 8. Is not this cake too rich?—Perhaps, but I like it so.

#### Quatrième Leçon. Suite des constructions interrogatives.

A. 1. Ces exercices sont très faciles, n'est-ce pas? . . . are they not? 2. Ces poires ne sont pas mûres, n'est-ce pas? . . . are they? 3. *N'est-ce pas que* j'ai un joli petit chat? Have I not, etc. 4. Vous jouez du piano, n'est-ce pas, mademoiselle? . . . do you not? 5. N'avez-vous pas une crosse?—Si,\* j'en ai une. . . . Yes, I have. 6. N'aimez-vous pas les crevettes?—Non (or, je ne les . . . No, I don't. aime pas). 7. Ce pauvre homme a douze enfants! Vraiment! . . . has he?

vraiment! . . . is he really?

\* Si for oui, in answer to a negative question.

8. Notre maître de musique est très savant.—Ah

CAUTION 1.—The interrogative phrases—is he? is he not? has he? does he? does he not? etc., are invariably rendered in French by n'est-ce pas? irrespective of the affirmative or negative form of the previous statement, and of the kind of verb they refer to.

CAUTION 2.—The English elliptical turns of speech—I have, I have not, I am, I do, I shall (not), etc., used in answer to a question, must be rendered in French—(1) simply by out, si, non, or (2) by the repetition of the whole sentence. In polite language add monsteur (messieurs), madame (mesdames), mademoiselle (mesdemoiselles).

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons (1) J'ai leur estime, n'est-ce pas?
(2) N'est-ce pas que je suis bien obligeant? and give the English.

B. 1. The study of the French language is easy, is it not?—It is. 2. These nuts are very hard, are they not?—Very hard indeed. 3. You are not looking for another servant, are you?—I am. 4. They always obey their parents, do they not?—They do. 5. You forgive me, dear Charley, don't you?—Yes, I do. 6. He is listening at the door, is he not?—No, he is not. 7. You do not ask for any money, do you?—No, we do not. 8. These pupils have obtained three prizes each.—Have they really \ 9. Do you love me?—Sometimes I do, and sometimes I don't.

#### Cinquième Lecon. Imparfait de l'Indicatif.

Learn the Impf. Indic. of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 4, 6, 8, 9).

- A. I. Les Romains ne brûlaient-ils pas leurs morts?
- 2. Les Athéniens ne bannissaient-ils pas souvent leurs grands hommes?
- 3. Les montagnards écossais ne descendaient-ils pas souvent de leurs montagnes?
- 4. Que cherchiez-vous tout à l'heure?
- 5. A quelle heure finissiesvous ordinairement vos leçons?
- 6. Pourquoi battiez-vous toujours votre pauvre chat?
- 7. Où était-elle, quand son oncle arriva?

Oui; et les anciens Egyptiens les embaûmaient.

Oui, et les Romains aussi bannissaient souvent grands généraux.

Oui, très souvent, et les fermiers tremblaient à leur approche.

Nous cherchions nos buvards.

Généralement nous finissions à sept heures et demie.

Nous le *battions*, parce qu'il *mangeait* nos oiseaux.

Elle *était* à la maison. 8. Mangerait-il tant, s'il était (3) malade? CAUTION.—(1) Never use the English form—I was speaking, etc.

The IMPARFAIT, je parlais, je finissais, j'attendais, etc., answers to the following English forms:

(1) I was speaking, finishing, waiting;

(2) I used to speak, I used to finish, I was wont to wait;
or (3) I spoke, I finished, I waited, etc., whenever used in the sense
of (1) or (2); for instance after if:—If I waited, si j'attendais. In other words, the Imparfait is used to describe-

(a) a past action already progressing, but not accomplished, at the time spoken of (comp. A. 4, 7, 8); [1, 2, 3, 5, 6).
(b) a past action usually done, i.e., habits, customs, etc. (comp. A. DRILL: Conjugate in all persons (1) I was not asking for my reward,

(2) I used to punish the lazy pupils, (3) I was wont to return the

money that I used to receive.

B. 1. You were speaking of the war, were you not?—No; on the contrary, we were speaking of the peace. 2. They were not waiting for the train, were they?—They 3. In summer we used to work [in] the morning. were not. 4. The poor fugitives were trembling with (= of) cold and (of) hunger. 5. We used to act, whilst they were considering. 6. We always \* used to have a dog with us. 7. Whenever our aunt returned, she used to bring (to) the 8. They used to breakfast at eight. children some cake. \* CAUTION.—(2) An Adverb in French is hardly ever placed between the Subject and its Verb; say here—we used to have always, etc.

# Sixième Leçon. L'Imparfait et le Prétérit (Passé Défini) comparés.

Here learn the Past (Preterite) of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs, pp. 4, 6, 8, 9.

A. 1. Où fates-vous lundi dernier?

2. Quand eutes-vous treize

3. Où les Romains attaquèrent-ils les Gaulois?

4. Quand les Athéniens bannirent-ils Thémistocle?

5. Pourquoi les troupes rompirent-elles leurs rangs?

Je fus au Palais de Cristal.

I'eus treize ans avant-hier.

Ils les attaquèrent dans leur camp retranché.

Ils le bannirent en 472 avant J.C.

Parce que la cavalerie ennemie fondit sur elles à l'improviste.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons: (1) Yesterday I was at the Exhibition, (2) Last week I had a reply, (3) On that occasion I did not find him, (4) I lost my way in the maze.

Whilst the Imperfect (see Lesson 5) is used to describe actions usually or repeatedly done, or actions which have already been going on at the time spoken of-

The Preterite is used to relate single historical events, without any reference to their duration, or to their relation with other actions.

Compare carefully:—

Imparfait. J'étais très malade quand il arriva.

I was (already) very ill when he arrived.

Les Romains brûlaient leurs morts. The Romans used to burn their dead. Quand j'étais à Brighton, je visitais l'Aquarium tous les soirs.

Nous attaquâmes les ennemis qui se retiralent. We attacked the enemy whilst they

were retreating.

Prétérit.

A mon retour, je fus très malade. On my return I was taken very ill (just then, but not before).

Les Romains brûlèrent Carthage. The Romans burnt Carthage. Hier je fus à Brighton et je visitai

l'Aquarium.

Nous attaquâmes les ennemis qui se retirérent. We attacked the enemy, who there-

upon retreated.

B. 1. I lost my way in this great forest, but at last I found a foot-path. 2. (The) Queen Dido founded Carthage. 3. Columbus discovered America. 4. Yesterday I found a beautiful gold necklace. 5. The lion being ill, invited his friends to enter into his cavern. 6. The gladiators used to fight in the arena. 7. I came down stairs at half-past six. 8. When I was at the seaside I used to come down stairs at seven, and I was wont to breakfast at a quarter to eight. 9. Having ( = when I had) replied to his letters, I dined. 10. They were playing, whilst we were working.

# Septième Leçon.

A. Un chasseur d'Amérique raconta un jour l'anecdote suivante:—L'hiver passé j'entendis dire que, dans une des grandes forêts à l'ouest, il y avait des ours d'une grandeur extraordinaire. Je partis aussitôt pour cette forêt, accompagné d'un de mes amis. Nous ne rencontrâmes aucun des ours, et nous dûmes le soir rentrer à l'auberge les mains vides. Plusieurs jours après, l'aubergiste rappela à mon ami que notre dépense était déjà bien grande; nous répondimes: Nous vous payerons avec la peau d'un de ces ours.

Enfin, un jour, nous apercumes deux ours dans la forêt. Ils marchaient dans notre direction. Nous perdimes courage; moi, je jetai mon fusil et je grimpai sur un arbre; mais mon ami se jeta par terre, retenant l'haleine. Il avait entendu

dire que les ours ne touchent pas aux cadavres.

Les deux bêtes approchèrent, flairèrent la bouche, le nez et les oreilles de mon ami, grommelèrent comme s'ils se parlaient et s'en allèrent. Quand ils furent bien loin, je descendis de l'arbre, et je dis à mon ami: Quel secret les ours t'ont-ils confié?—"Il ne faut pas vendre la peau de l'ours avant d'avoir tué la bête."

In the above story account for the use of the Tenses—either Imperfect or Preterite.

B. I. Last winter my friends related to me a pretty story. 2. They were hunting bears in order to sell their skins. 3. For a long time, however, they met no bears.

4. At last, one morning, they perceived two bears that were walking in their direction. 5. They lost courage, and threw away their guns. 6. One of them climbed a tree, and the other threw himself (se, before the Verb) on the ground.

7. When the two beasts approached, they grumbled as if they were speaking to one another. 8. When they had gone, the one (celui) who had climbed the tree came down.

9. And asked the other what secret the bears had confided to him. 10. First kill the bear, and then sell his skin.

# Huitième Lecon. Passé Indéfini.

Here learn Present Perfect Indicat. of Auxiliary (pp. 5, 7) and Regular (pp. 12, 13) Verbs.

A. I. Avez-vous enfin retrouvé ma lettre?

2. Votre sœur a-t-elle enfin réussi?

3. Les élèves ont-ils répondu à toutes les questions?

4. Ces voyageurs n'*ont* jamais été en Sibérie, n'estce pas?

5. Depuis quand êtes-vous à la maison?

6. Y a-t-il longtemps qu'il est malade?

7. Où demeurez-vous maintenant?

Oui, je l'ai *retrouvée* ce matin.

Non, elle n'a pas encore réussi.

A toutes, excepté une seule, qui était trop difficile.

Si, ils ont traversé toute l'Asie.

Depuis longtemps.

Voilà déjà trois jours qu'il est dangereusement malade.

Te demeure à Londres depuis nombre d'années.

The Passé Indéfini is used-

(I) like the English Present Perfect, to denote an action now past :-Enfin il m'a répondu. He has replied to me at last.

(2) contrary to English, for any action happened at some indefinite past time (hence its name); especially in conversation and in the familiar style of writing: as,

pas longtemps.

The French PRESENT answers the English PRES. PERF., if used with depuis quand? combien y a-t-il que? depuis que, voilà que, il y a longtomps que: as.

Depuis quand neige-t-il ? Il neige depuis hier soir.

Ya-t-illongtemps que vous voyagez? Have you been travelling long? Il y a bien trois mois que je suis en route.

How long has it been snowing? It has been snowing since yesternight.

I have now been on the way fully three months.

CAUTION .- For, referring to time present or past, must not be rendered by pour, but by depuis, or il y a longtemps que, or by p.ndant.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Il y a longtemps que j'ai déjeûné;
(2) Combien y a-t-il que je suis sorti?

B. r. How long have you been playing?—We have been playing for a long time. 2. Since when have they been in this country?—Since last year. 3. We met a bear the other day.—Did you? 4. Where does your aunt live now?—She has been living in Brussels these three years and a half. 5. Did the pupil answer (to) these questions? No, he did not. 6. He was just coming down stairs, when you arrived. 7. Have they been in this country for a long time? 8. Is it not long since that happened?—Yes, very long.

# Neuvième Leçon. Plusqueparfait et Passé Antérieur.

Here learn both French forms of the Past Perfect (Pluperfect), pp. 5, 7, and 12, 13.

A. 1. Quand descendiezvous ordinairement?

2. Quand êtes-vous descendu ce matin?

- 3. Quand sont-ils partis?
- 4. Avez-vous entendu le chant du coq?
- 5. Ne vous avais-je pas averti?
- 6. Votre père ne vous avait-il pas défendu de manger de ce fruit?

Quand j'avais achevé ma besogne.

Dès que j'eus achevé mes affaires.

Aussitôt qu'ils eurent fini leur thème.

Oui, je n'eus pas plus tôt entendu sa voix, que je sautai du lit.

C'est vrai, mais à peine fus-je parti, que j'oubliai vos bons conseils.

En effet; aussi n'y avonsnous pas touché.

There is the same difference between the Plusqueparfait and Passé Antérieur as between the Imparfait and Prétérit (see Lessons 5 and 6), i.e. use the Plusqueparfait for actions usually accomplished at a time itself accomplished and the Passé Antérieur for single actions accomplished immediately before the past time referred to; hence it is almost exclusively used after the conjunctions—

après que, after; dès que, des que, se soon es; à peine, hardly, scarcely; aussitôt que, lorsque, when; no sooner...he

Compare :-Quand j'avais déjeûné, je sortais. Whenever (every tim: when) I had breakfasted, I used to go out.

Lorsque j'eus déjeûné, je sortis. When (not "whenever," but "on a certain occasion") I had breakfasted, I went out.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Quand j'avais bien travaillé, je me reposais; (2) Dès que j'eus réfléchi, j'agis; (3) Je ne fus pas plus tôt descendu, que je tombai.

- B. 1. He had warned the poachers several times, but they did not listen to his advice. 2. We had quite forgotten to reply to our correspondent. 3. We had no sooner begun to sing when (= que) they began to dance. 4. Every time when the autumn approached, the swallows used to return to (=en) Africa. 5. When the summer of 1868 approached, the family returned to the seaside. 6. Hardly had they finished when  $(=que)^*$  they began again. 7. How long have you been waiting?—Not very long. 8. The English had no sooner surrounded the town when it surrendered.
- \* CAUTION.—If when is used relatively, i.e. referring back to a Noun, Adverb, Phrase, or Sentence denoting time (as above), it must, as a rule, be rendered by que, and not by quand: as,

One day when...

un jour que (or où). Hardly had he come when... à peine fut-il venu que.

# Dixième Leçon. Futur Présent et Conditionnel Présent.

Here learn the Future and Conditional Present of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 4, 6, and 8-11).

A. I. Votre cousin nous actompagnera-t-il demain à la campagne?

2. Votre élève accomplira-

t-il ses devoirs? 3. La servante descendra-t-

elle bientôt?

4. Me prêteriez-vous votre dictionnaire français-latin, si je vous promettais de le rendre demain?

5. Agiriez-vous ainsi, si vous étiez à ma place?

Il vous accompagnera avec beaucoup de plaisir.

Il les *accomplira* scrupuleusement.

Elle descendra dans un quart d'heure.

A cette condition, je vous le prêterais volontiers.

Non, ce n'est pas ainsi que j'agirais.

6. Lui permettriez-vous de rester, s'il vous demandait la s'il promettait de se tenir permission?

The FUTURE PRESENT is on the whole used as in English; but-

CAUTION.—After Conjunctions of time—quand, lorsque (when), aussitht que, des que (as soon as), Future actions must be expressed by the Future tenses; in English, the present tense is generally used: as,

Avertissez-moi quand ils arriveront. Inform me when they arrive.

The CONDITIONAL is used-

(1) in Principal Clauses, to describe an action the accomplishment of which depends on a condition, either expressed in a dependent clause or understood:—

Je resterais, si j'avais le temps. I should stay if I had the time.

(2) in Dependent Clauses, to describe a future action viewed from the past—

Il espère que tu resteras. He hopes that you will stay. Il espèrait que tu resterais. He hoped that you would stay.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) I shall return when I have time;
(2) I should return if I had time; (3) I should lose my train if I waited.

B. I. We hope that you will accompany us to the seaside. 2. I should accompany you willingly, if you gave me plenty of shrimps to eat. 3. When shall you return to the country?—When you return to (the) town. 4. We should have been happy, if you had (= were) remained here another fortnight. 5. He would have more friends, if he had more money. 6. How long has he been in England now?—A year and a half. 7. He declares that he will resist. 8. He declared that he would resist. 9. If he replied to us, we should also reply to him. 10. Which of these overcoats shall you choose 11. If they obeyed, we should reward them. 12. The admiral expected that the sailors would fight well.

# Onzième Leçon. Futur Passé et Conditionnal Passé.

Here learn the Future and Conditional Perf. of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 5, 7, 12, 13).

A. I. A quelle heure le Il sera arrivé à midi, train sera-t-il arrivé?

2. Quand aures-vous enfin Quand vous aures fint la accompli votre tâche? Vôtre.

3. La rivière n'aurait-elle pas rompu ses digues, s'il avait plu?

4. Aurait-il réussi, s'il avait agi avec plus de prudence?

5. Charles XII. aurait-il eu tant de malheurs, s'il avait suivi les conseils de ses généraux?

6. Qui êtes-vous?

Oui, et les avalanches seraient descendues des montagnes.

Oui, je suis sûr qu'il

n'aurait pas échoué.

Non; il aurait évité de grands désastres, s'il avait été moins obstiné.

Je suis le chef de vingtquatre soldats; sans moi Paris serait pris.

The Rules given for the use of the Future and Conditional Pres., p. 87, also hold good with regard to the Future and Conditional Perfect.

CAUTION 1.—Avoid the use of the Future and Conditional after si, when. As a rule these tenses can only be used after si answering to whether:—

Si (if) le messager arrive avant moi, dites-lui de rester.

CAUTION 2.—The English Auxiliaries should and would must be rendered by the Conditionnel, only when they come under the Rules mentioned in the Tenth Lesson.

The Future Perfect is also used to express that something may have happened, or must have happened:—

Pourquoi le train est-il en retard?— Il aura eu un accident.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je n'aurai pas achevé ma tâche, etc.; (2) Je n'aurais pas rougi, si je n'avais pas eu honte; (3) Je ne serais pas descendu, si j'étais malade.

B. 1. We should have replied to you, if you had replied to us. 2. Charles XII. would have succeeded, if he had listened [to] reason. 3. They would not have failed in their enterprise, if they had not been so careless. 4. If you had avoided the use of the Conditional after si, in the sense of if, you would not have had any mistakes. 5. For the future I shall certainly avoid to use the Future and Conditional after si, when. 6. These inattentive pupils would have avoided many mistakes, if they had not used the Present after des que and aussibit que, would they not?—Of course. 7. Why on earth did he not return?—He must have been ill.

#### II.—USES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

#### Douzième Leçon. Présent du Subjonctif.

Here learn the Present Subjunctive of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 4, 6, 10, 11).

As a rule, the SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (as its name implies) is only used in *Dependent*, i.e. Subjoined, Clauses; whether the Indicative or the Subjunctive is to be used depends entirely on the meaning of the *Principal* Clause: compare—

Je crois (je sais)
Je ne crois pas
Je doute
que cet homme est riche.
que cet homme soit riche.

First Rule of the Subjunctive.—When the Verb of the Principal Clause contains a Verb or Phrase denoting a wish, will, command, consent, as—désirer, souhaiter, to wish; vouloir, to want, to be willing; demander, exiger, to require, to insist upon, to expect; ordonner, to order; permettre, souffrir, to allow, to permit; prier, supplier, to entreat, and the like, the Verb in the Dependent Clause must be in the Subjunctive, thereby indicating that the action is not considered as a matter of fact, but simply conceived in the mind of the speaker:—

Principal Clause.

Le maître désire que nous commencions.

Le directeur insiste que nous finissions.

Votre tante approuve que nous descendions.

- CAUTION 1.—Bear in mind that after que—which is merely a connecting link between the Principal and Dependent Clause—the Indicative may be used just as well as the Subjunctive; see above.
- CAUTION 2.—Notice carefully the difference of construction between English and French after Verbs of desiring, wishing, etc.:—

i.e. English:—Acc. + Infinitive. French:—Nom. + Subjunctive.

He wishes 

thee to finish. Il désire que tu finisses. qu'il descende.

CAUTION 3.—The English Verb construed with should, answers to the French Subjunctive, and not to the Conditional, when it depends on a Verb of wishing, commanding, feeling, etc.:—

It is a pity you should be late. Il est dommage que vous soyez en retard.

DRILL: Conjugate in full the dependent clauses of the following sentences—(1) On exige que je recommence; (2) Elle souhaite que je réussisse; (3) On trouve bon que j'attende; (4) Il consent que j'aie congé; (5) Ils trouvent mauvais que je sois ici.

A. 1. Pourquoi désirez-vous que je retourne à la maison?

2. Le maître insiste que je finisse avant midi et demi, n'est-ce pas?

3. Trouvez-vous bon que je vous réponde en français?

4. L'usage permet-il qu'on emploie l'infinitif après un verbe qui exprime la volonté?

5. Souffrez, je vous en prie, que je vous attende à la

6. Votre ami souhaite-t-il que je réussisse?

Parce que je désire que vous ne soyez pas en retard.

Oui, il n'approuve pas que vous ayez un dîner froid.

Non seulement je trouve bon, mais j'insiste, que vous me répondiez en français.

Oui, à condition que les deux verbes aient le même sujet.

J'aime mieux que vous m'attendiez chez vous.

Oui, il souhaite que vos efforts soient couronnés de succès.

DRILL: (1) Conjugate in all persons sing. and pl. the Examples given in the First Rule of Subj. (2) the 2nd sentence (answer and question)

B. 1. I wish you to speak French. 2. Your parents require that you should stay at home and finish your work. 3. The masters insist that you should answer distinctly. 4. I wish you not to forget the verbs which govern the subjunctive. 5. Do the rules of (the) French Grammar require that one should use the subjunctive after "aimer mieux," to prefer, to have rather?—They do. 6. Do you allow my little brother to stay at home?—No. 7. Does your uncle approve of our returning home? 8. I wish that these pupils may be successful in their examination. 9. We all<sup>2</sup> wish<sup>1</sup> that their efforts be crowned with success. 10. Do you require that he should wait here?

# Treizième Leçon. Imparfait du Subjonctif.

Here learn the Imperfect Subjunctive of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 4, 6, 10, 11).

A. 1. Ses parents ne dé-Oui, ils ne permettaient pas siraient-ils pas qu'il restât à qu'il sortit si tard. la maison ?

2. Qu'exigeait - on de l'écolier?

3. Trouvaient-ils bon que l'élève répondît en anglais?

4. Doutez-vous qu'il soit chez lui?

5. *Douties*-vous qu'il *fût* chez lui?

6. Croyez-vous qu'il ait assez d'argent?

7. Croyiez-vous qu'il eût assez d'argent?

Qu'il ne *salit* pas ses cahiers.

Non, ils exigeaient qu'il répondit en français.

Je doute fort qu'il y soit.

Je doutais fort qu'il y fût.

Je ne *crois* pas qu'il en ait assez pour ce voyage.

Je ne *croyais* pas qu'il en eût assez.

Second Rule of the Subjunctive.—When the Verb or Phrase in the *Principal* Clause expresses a doubt, or uncertainty as to the statement contained in the *Dependent* Clause, the Verb of the *Dependent* Clause must be in the *Subjunctive*:—

Principal Clause.

Il doute fort que nous retournions.
Il ne croit pas que nous finissions.\*

Croit-il donc que nous descendions?\*

\* Bear in mind that Verbs of saying and thinking imply doubt only if used interrogatively, negatively as above, or conditionally.

If the Verb in the *Principal* Clause is in the *Past* or *Conditional*, the Verb in the *Dependent* Clause must, as a rule, also be in the *Past* Tense. Compare the sentences in A.

DRILL: Conjugate the second part of the questions 1, 3, 4, 5 in A. in all persons singular and plural.

B. 1. Our friends wish us to speak distinctly. 2. They wished us to speak distinctly. 3. I doubt if (=que) Fred is at home. 4. I doubted if he was at home. 5. Do you think that Francis speaks correctly? 6. I did not think that he spoke correctly. 7. Do you believe that he acts prudently? 8. I did not believe that he acted prudently. 9. Do they think that he will return (= returns+) their money? 10. Alas! they do not think that he will return their money. 11. How long do you want me to wait for you? 12. He insists upon my staying (= that I stay) here.

† The Present Subj. also does duty for the Future Subjunctive.

#### Quatorzième Leçon. Parfait et Plusqueparfait du Subjonctif.

Here learn the Perfect and Pluperfect Subj. of Auxiliary and Regular Verbs (pp. 5, 7, 12, 13).

A. 1. N'êtes-vous pas enchanté que Jeanne soit arrivée?

2. Cette remarque n'est-

elle pas très juste?

- 3. Je trouve bien étrange que vous n'ayez pas répondu à sa lettre.
- 4. Ne trouvez pas mauvais, je vous en prie, que je vous aie parlé avec franchise.
- 5. J'ai vraiment hon'e qu'il ait négligé ses devoirs.
- 6. Charles n'est-il pas fâché que nous ne l'ayons pas attendu?

J'en suis charmé.

Oui, je suis bien aise que vous l'ayes faite.

Et moi, je trouve étrange que vous osiez me faire des remontrances.

Pas le moins du monde; je trouve bon que vous ayez eu le courage de parler à cœur ouvert.

Quel dommage qu'il ait été si négligent!

Oui, il regrette que vous ayez eu si peu d'égards pour lui.

Third Rule of the Subjunctive.—If the Verb or Phrase in the Principal Clause denotes an affection (emotion) of the mind with regard to the statement contained in the Dependent Clause, as joy, sorrow, surprise, shame, fear, and the like, the Verb of the Dependent Clause is put in the Subjunctive:—

Principal Clause.

Elle est charmée
Elle craint
Ils sont surpris

Dependent Clause. que je sois retourné. que je n'aie pas obéi. que je sois descendu.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons the above dependent clauses.

B. r. I am delighted that you speak so distinctly. 2. I am delighted that you have spoken so well. 3. We were delighted that you spoke French. 4. They were delighted that you had spoken to him. 5. Your aunt is shocked that you do not obey your parents. 6. Our cousin too (also) was shocked that you did not obey at once. 7. I am sorry that he does not reply to us. 8. I was sorry that he had not replied to my question. 9. How glad I am (=that I am glad) that you have explained the rules of the subjunctive in French! 10. Do you think (=find) that they are difficult?—No; on the contrary, I begin to (=\frac{1}{2}) believe that they are very easy.

#### Quinzième Leçon. Subjonctif (Suite).

Here go through all Tenses of the Subjunctive again.

- A. 1. Faut-il que vous parliez ainsi?
- 2. Est-il nécessaire que vous agissiez ainsi?
- 3. Est-il possible que vous n'entendiez pas?
- 4. Il est temps que vous soyez de retour, n'est-ce pas?
- 5. Ne vaut-il pas mieux que vous ayez patience?

Oui, il faut que nous parlions à cœur ouvert.

Il faut bien que nous agissions ainsi.

Il est impossible que nous vous entendions, si vous ne parlez pas plus haut.

Oui, il importe que nous soyons chez nous avant midi et (un) quart.

En effet, il faut que nous ayons patience.

Fourth Rule of the Subjunctive.—In accordance with the three first Rules, the Verb in the Dependent Clause must be in the Subjunctive, if the Principal Clause contains any Impersonal Verb or Phrase expressing—(1) wish, command, necessity, (2) doubt, uncertainty, (3) joy, sorrow, surprise, fear, etc.

Principal Clause.

Dependent Clause.

fi faut

que nous commencions.\* It is necessary that we should begin.

Il est temps que nous finissions. Il est important que nous attendions. It is time that we should finish.
It is important that we should wait.

Compare-English with-French Subject + Pers. Verb. + Infinit. Impers. Verb + Subject + Subjunctive. must stay. Il faut que je reste. Thou obey. Il faut que tu obéisses. must Il faut qu' He (one) must hear. il (on) entende. be rich. Il faut qu' She must elle soit riche. We Il faut que must have. nous ayons.

For other constructions with falloir, see Lessons 42, 43.

- DRILL: Conjugate in full—(1) I must stay here, (2) it is time for me to (i.e. that I should) finish, (3) it is just that I should reply, (4) it is convenient that I should be here, (5) it is convenient that I should have the preference.
- B. 1. It is necessary that I should bring (= I must bring)
  him these letters. 2. It was necessary that I should bring
  him more books. 3. It is time for him to return (= that he
  should return). 4. It was time for him to return. 5. It is

better that he should be quiet. 6. It was better that he should be quiet. 7. It is just that he should be rewarded. 8. It was just that he should be rewarded. 9. Is it important that they should succeed? 10. Can it be that they have not yet seen the Exhibition?

#### Seizième Leçon. Subjonctif (Suite).

A. 1. Approchez, afin que je vous gronde!

2. Ne retournez pas avant que je vous avertisse!

3. Pourquoi ne répondezvous pas, *quoique* je vous interroge?

4. Attendez donc jusqu'à ce que j'aie trouvé mon portemonnaie!

5. Achevez ce travail de manière que vos parents soient contents de vous!

Avec plaisir, *pourvu que* vous ne me *battiez* pas.

Je ne retournerai pas, d moins que vous ne m'avertissiez.

Je ne réponds pas, de peur que vous ne soyez choqué de mon ignorance.

Soit! je ne vous quitterai pas, avant que vous l'ayez retrouvé.

Nous travaillerons de sorte qu'ils aient sujet d'être contents de notre ouvrage.

Fifth Rule of the Subjunctive.—The Verb of a Dependent (Adverbial) Clause linked to the Principal Clause by one of the following Subordinate Conjunctions is put in the Subjunctive :afin que, pour que, in order that. quoique, bien que, although, though. pour peu que... if ever...so little. de manière que,\* } in such a way that, desorte(façon)que\* } so that. avant que,\* before. en (au) cas que, in case. jusqu'à ce que,\* malgré que, until. although, despite. en attendant que, whilst, until. à moins que...ne, unless. pourvu que, provided that. provided that. de crainte que...ne, \ lest, supposing that. de peur que ...ne, \ for fear that. supposé que, Distinguish carefully between-

(I) before, preposition = avant (time), devant (place);

(2) before, adverb = auparavant (occasionally avant, devant); and
(3) before, Conj. with Subj. = avant que, or with Infinitive = avant de.
Obs. —Those marked \* may take the Verb in the Indicative, if it

expresses an accomplished fact:—
J'ai travaillé de manière qu'il est content ...so that he is satisfied.
Je travaillerai de manière qu'il soit content ...so that he may be satisfied.

CAUTION.—The English Auxiliary may, might, must be rendered by the Subjunctive, only if the Verb comes under one of the Rules of the Subjunctive, thus—"You may go" does not depend on any preceding Verb or Conjunction, therefore use the Indicative of Ponvoir, may, can. See Lesson 40.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons singular and plural the second part of these sentences:—

(1) Il partira avant que j'arrive. (2) Elle le fera pourvu que je lui obéisse. (3) Ils demandent afin que je réponde. (4) Je me dépêche de crainte que je ne sois en retard.

B. 1. We repeat it (= le) in order that you may hear it. 2. They will wait until you return. 3. Let us finish these French sentences so that the examiner be satisfied. 4. Speak louder, so that I may hear you more distinctly. 5. Try to finish this note before your father arrives, 6. He always answers in English, although we speak French to him. 7. He has not succeeded, although he acted very cautiously. 8. They will succeed, provided they act more cautiously. 9. It is better that you should stay here until it strikes half-past twelve o'clock. 10. You have not been punished, although you have deserved it. 11. I did not want him to stay.

#### III. -L'INFINITIF.

#### Dix-septième Leçon. L'Infinitif sans Préposition.

A. 1. *Mentir* est honteux, n'est-ce pas?

2. Désirez-vous rester à la

maison?

- 3. Espérez vous réussir ainsi?
- 4. Voulez-vous me répondre ou non?
- 5. Croyez vous avoir
- 6. Comptez-vous être de retour avant une heure et demie du matin?
- 7. Faut-il répondre tout de suite?
- 8. Avez-vous envoyé chercher le médecin?
- 9. Faut il vivre pour manger?

Oui, il est honteux de mentir.

J'aime mieux sortir.

Oui, j'espère surmonter toutes les difficultés.

Je *veux* bien vous *répondre*, pourvu que vous ayez patience.

Je ne crois pas avoir tort.

Nous comptons être chez nous à minuit moins un quart.

Non, il vaut mieux attendre.

Oui, je l'ai envoyé chercher.

Non, il faut manger pour

General Rule of the Infinitive.—A Verb used as SUBJECT, or as the COMPLEMENT of another Verb, of a Noun, an Adjective, or a Preposition, must be in the Infinitive.

First Special Rule.—The INFINITIVE is used without preposition— (a) as the Subject of a sentence: as,

> Lying is shameful. Mentir est honteux.

(b) as the Direct Complement of-

(I) (so-called) Auxiliary Verbs of Mood: as, pouvoir (§ 10, b), to be able. devoir (§ 10, a), to be obliged. Savoir (§ 10, b), to know, to know how to. falloir (§ 10, b), to be necessary, must, vouloir (§ 10, b), to wish. oser, to venture. [etc.

(2) Verbs of Perceiving (as hearing, seeing, feeling), Causing, Motion (as going, coming), etc.: as, voir (§ 10, c), to see. aller (§ 8), to go. entendre, to hear. venir (§ 9, c), to come. sentir (§ 9, a), to feel. laisser, to allow. faire (§ 11, d), to make, to cause, to order, etc.

(3) Verbs of Saying, Thinking, Wishing, etc.: as, affirmer, to affirm. nier, to deny. croire, to believe. penser, to think.

désirer, to wish, to desire. espérer (also used with de), to hope. aimer mieux, } to prefer, to like préférer, } better, etc.

For a complete list, see Appendix.

CAUTION.—The Verbal form in -ing, used Substantively in English, must not be rendered by the Pres. Part. in French, but by the Infinitive, which is virtually a Verbal Noun, answering to the English Gerund:-

Do you expect returning this evening?—Comptez-yous revenir ce soir?

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) I expected returning yesterday; (2) I prefer waiting here.

B. r. Does the pupil wish to copy his Latin exercise? 2. Do you hope to reach the town before it strikes twelve 3. No, but I reckon to be there before half-past 4. We prefer to see you to-morrow. 5. Do you hear him sing?—Do you call that (=cela) singing? 6. Does he expect to meet you at the theatre?—No, but he hopes to find you at the concert. 7. We have sent him to fetch some paper, ink, pens, and postage-stamps. 8. Does he believe, then, he is right?—He does. 9. You do intend to beat me, do you?—I don't. 10. I had (would, voudrais) rather stay here. 11. Let us send for the policeman. 12. He expects to stay here a fortnight.

#### Dix-huitième Leçon. L'Infinitif après la Préposition de.

- A. 1. Qui donc vous a dit de ne pas faire cela?
- 2. Vous avez oublié de m'envoyer cet argent, n'est ce pas?
- 3. Auriez vous la *com*plaisance de me prêter votre dictionnaire latin?
- 4. Le boulanger n'a-t-il pas *promis d'envoyer* le pain avant midi?
- 5. Avez-vous l'intention de me payer enfin?
- 6. Que me conseillez-vous

de faire?
Second Special Rule of the Infi

C'est le maître lui-même qui m'a empêché de le faire.

C'est vrai, mais je ne manquerai pas de vous l'en-voyer ce soir même.

Je me fais un plaisir de vous le prêter.

Oui, mais il paraît avoir oublié de l'envoyer.

Oui, car je suis fatigué de vous entendre demander votre argent.

Il n'est pas facile de donner un avis dans cette affaire.

Second Special Rule of the Infinitive.—After Prepositions, except en (after which alone the Pres. Part. is used), the Verb is put in the Infinitive.

(a) The Infinitive is used with the Preposition de-

(1) As a Complement after transitive Verbs, especially those not mentioned in the first Special Rule, nor further on under (b) and (d):— Nous vous prions de revenir bientôt. We entreat you to return soon.

(2) As a Complement of most Nouns and Adjectives, except those mentioned further on under (b) and (d):— [seeing you? Quand aurai-je le plaisir de vous voir? When shall I have the pleasure of Ayez la bonté de m'éclairer. Have the kindness to light me. Je suis charmé de vous rencontrer. I am so pleased to meet you. Il est loin de penser ainsi. He is far from thinking thus. DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) I was pleased to meet my friend;

(2) I had the pleasure of seeing my parents.

B. 1. We have forgotten to send you those French books. 2. He advised us to wait till to-morrow. 3. He deserves to be punished. 4. I ask you to listen to me. 5. They are incapable of translating that, are they not? 6. He had the kindness to help us. 7. It would be easy to help you, if you were not so impatient. 8. We are tired of waiting for him. 9. It (=this) is a pleasure to see you in such (=so) good health. 10. The ancient Romans were very clever in the art of building. 11. Why do you prevent me from working? 12. I am far from wishing to prevent you from working.

#### Dix-neuvième Lecon. L'Infinitif après la Préposition à

A. I. Aimez-vous à patiner?

2. Avez - vous appris à nager?

écoliers ont - ils 3. Ces beaucoup de leçons à apprendre?

4. Se peut-il que monsieur Harpagon vous ait invité à dîner?

- 5. Consentiriez vous à m'accompagner?
- 6. Avez-vous réussi à le persuader?

Mais oui, je m'amuse parfois à tracer des figures.

Oui, je sais déjà faire la planche.

Non, ils n'ont presque rien à faire.

Non, mais parcontre, il a dit au domestique de m'apporter un grand verre d'eau fraîche!

Oui, mais malheureusement j'ai encore un poème dapprendre par cœur.

Non, il s'obstine à pousser l'affaire à bout.

(b) The Infinitive is used with the Preposition &:-

(1) After Verbs which denote endeavouring, learning, exhorting, consenting, consisting, purpose, fitness, destination, repugnance, and the like: as,

aimer à jouer, to be fond of playing. chercher à nuire, to try to hurt.

enseigner à cuire, to teach cooking. montrer à faire, to show how to do. apprendre à dessiner, to learn drawing.

Thus also :s'appliquer à bien faire. encourager à persévérer. exhorter à obeir.

inviter à dîner. consentir à revenir, etc. [devoir. le bonheur consiste à faire son

(2) After Adjectives of a like meaning: as, prét à partir, ready to start. disposé à répondre, disposed to reply. adroit (habile) à dissimuler, clever in dissimulating.

prompt à décider, quick in deciding. lent à travailler, slow to work. bon à manger, good to eat.

- (3) After Nouns to denote their destination, fitness: as, la salle à manger, the dining-room. la machine à coudre, sewing machine la chambre à coucher, the bed-room. du bois à brûler, firewood.
  - (4) To denote an action to be done:—
- (a) With avoir (answering to the Latin Gerund-mihi agendum est): as, J'ai un thème à corriger, I have an exercise to correct. J'ai à corriger un thème,

(β) With être (answering to the Latin Gerundive—res agenda est): as, Cette version est à refaire, This translation is to be done again.

or impersonally (answering to the Latin Gerund—desiderandum est): as,
Il est & désirer, It is to be hoped.

CAUTION.—Avoid rendering the English Passive Infinitive by the French Passive after avoir or être to express something to be done:

Render, for instance—It is to be regretted, by—Il est à regretter.

B. 1. His friends have encouraged him to redouble his efforts (say to redouble of efforts). 2. Are these oranges good to eat? 3. Is your comrade disposed to accompany you? 4. Yes, but he has yet thirty lines to learn by heart. 5. Are you fond of fishing? 6. Yes; just fancy, yesterday I succeeded in catching three little gudgeons. 7. We are trying to buy a second-hand sewing-machine. 8. Are these fine houses to let?—No, they are to be sold. 9. Have they succeeded in finding a good maid-servant?—O yes, but she is rather slow at work (=working) and quick at answering.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) I learn singing and dancing;
(2) I do not try to hurt you; (3) I was fond of hunting.

## Vingtième Leçon. L'Infinitif dépendant des prépositions—sans, après, pour, par.

A. 1. Cela est-il difficile à traduire?

2. Il est bien difficile à contenter, n'est-ce pas?

3. Comment les flâneurs passent-ils leur vie?

4. Vous avez bien tardé à venir!

5. L'express n'est-il pas bien *long à* venir?

6. A-t-il fini par y consentir?

7. Résléchissez bien avant d'agir!

Oui, ce n'est pas facile à traduire.

Oui, j'ai beaucoup de peine à le contenter.

Ils passent leur vie à regarder sans voir, à écouter sans entendre, et à marcher sans faire du chemin.

C'est que j'avais plusieurs commissions à faire.

En effet, mais nous espérons qu'il ne *tardera* pas à arriver.

Non, après avoir longtemps hésité, il refusa tout net.

Oui, n'agissons qu'après avoir bien réfléchi. (c) Besides de and à, the following Prepositions (which alone may take a Verb-complement) take this Verb in the Infinitive:—

Sans demander pardon. Après avoir fini. Pour vous obliger.\* Il finit par ceder.

Without begging pardon.

After having finished.

To (in order to) oblige you. He ended by yielding.

and all those compounded with de or &; as, afin de, avant de, à moins de, de manière à, etc., see 3rd Special Rule (b), p. 101.

- \* To, used in the sense of in order to, is to be rendered by pour.
- (d) There are certain Verbs, Adjectives, and Nouns, after which the Infinitive may stand either with do or with a :-
- (I) After an Adjective-complement of the Impersonal il est, use the Infinitive with de; after c'est, use the Infinitive with à:-

Il est facile de faire cela. C'est facile à faire.

It is easy to do that. That is easy to do.

(2) The English in with the Gerund in -ing generally answers to the French & with the Infinitive:-

J'ai eu le plaisir de le voir.

I have had the pleasure of seeing him. J'aurai beaucoup de plaisir à vous I shall have great pleasure in seeing you.

Il a réussi à\* le tromper.

He has succeeded in deceiving him.

- \* à instead of dans, which cannot take a Verb-complement.
- B. 1. It was quite impossible to do it. 2. He set out without asking our permission. 3. We shall work hard in order to deserve a reward. 4. We have had the pleasure of meeting him. 5. That is easy to say. 6. Have they succeeded in speaking to the minister? 7. He ended by declaring that it was useless. 8. How do you spend your time?—I spend my time in travelling. 9. I long to see 10. After having taken the town and killed the inhabitants, the enemies began to plunder the houses. 11. We sow in order to gather. 12. They chatter without ceasing.

#### Emploi de l'Infinitif au lieu du Vingt-et-unième Lecon. Subjonctif ou de l'Indicatif, etc.

A. 1. Croyez-vous pouvoir compter sur son amitié?

2. Pourquoi ce petit monsieur croit-il toujours avoir raison ?

Oui, nous espérons ne pas nous tromper en lui.

Parce qu'il a fort bonne opinion de sa petite personne

- 3. Ne vous avait-il pas promis de vous écrire?
- 4. Pourquoi le médecin vous défend-il de boire du vin?
- 5. Est-ce que vous avouerez enfin avoir tort?

Oui, il nous tarde beaucoup d'avoir de ses nouvelles.

Parce que j'ai un accès de fièvre.

Au contraire, je crois que c'est vous qui avez tort.

(1) The Infinitive is used in preference to the Indicative, Subjunctive, or Conditional, if the second Verb has the same subject as the first Verb :-

say-Je voudrais être un oiseau! I wish I were a bird! He thinks he is right! Il croit avoir raison! We hope we shall see you to-morrow, ,, Nous esperons your voir demain. but-We hope you will stay, " Nous espérons que vous resterez.

(2) After Verbs of ordering, permitting, and the like, the Infinitive is also preferred, when the *Object* of the first Verb is the Subject of the second Verb (Lat. Accus. + Infinit.): as,

I order (allow) you to go out.

Je vous ordonne (permets) de sortir.

(3) Thus also the Infinitive is used instead of other Moods after the following Conjunctions, which are then changed into Prepositions, provided also that the two Verbs have the same subject: as,

Instead of-

Il partit avant qu'il eat fini, Je travaille pour que je réussisse, Il agit de manière qu'il les contente,

Il partit avant d'avoir fini. Je travaille *pour réussir*. Il agit de manière à les contenter.

- DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) I wish I had a house; (2) I thought I was wrong; (3) I shall study in order to pass my examination.
- B. 1. Do you hope to meet him at six o'clock?—We do. 2. Do you hope that we shall meet him? 3. We repeat it for fear of forgetting it. 4. We repeat it for fear you should forget it. 5. I wish I had a carriage and pair. 6. He works in order to pass his time. 7. Let us consider well before we act. 8. We had breakfasted before it had struck seven. 9. He forbids us to drink cold water. 10. Do they think, then, that they are infallible? 11. They ordered the pupils to stay till a quarter to twelve. 12. He has not acted so as to win the esteem of his superiors.

#### Vingt-deuxième Leçon. Participe Présent.

A. I. Ces histoires sontelles amusantes?

2. En agissant ainsi, n'ontils pas affligé leurs parents?

3. N'est-ce pas à la marée descendante qu'ils ont mis à la voile?

4. Vous avez vraiment une faim *dévorante*.

5. Cette jeune personne n'est-elle pas très obligeante?

6. Ses manières ne sontelles pas prévenantes?

Au contraire, je les trouve très ennuyeuses.

Oui, ils ont fait preuve d'une dureté révoltante.

Non, ce fut à la marée montante (à haute marée).

Que voulez-vous! l'appétit vient en mangeant.

Oui, en obligeant ses compagnes, elle gagne leur affection.

En effet, et en prévenant les désirs de ses supérieures, elle a mérité leur estime.

The Present Participle is used in French, either—

(a) Adverbially, without agreement (as a Present Part. proper)-

I. Elles sont sorties en riant. , They went out laughing.

Tout en parlant ainsi il s'eloigna. L'homme est la seule créature par-Whilst speaking thus he withdrew.

2. Vivant simplement, ils sont contents de peu.

As they live plainly, they are satisfied with little.

(b) Adjectively, agreeing in Gender and Number (as a Verbal Adjective)-

Voilà une physionomie *riante*. There is a bright (lit. laughing) physiognomy.

lante. Man is the only speaking creature.

Ces poissons sont encore vivants.

These fishes are still living.

3. Les ennemis se retiraient, brû-Ses mains sont brûlantes. lant tout sur leur passage.

From the above examples, it will be seen that the Present Participle remains unchanged—(1) after on, which is the only Preposition that takes the Pres. Part.; (2) if qualified by a following Adverb, or answering to as with the *Indicative*; (3) if it has an Object.

CAUTIONS.—Bear in mind once more-

(1) that the French have no form of Conjugation answering to the English Continuous :-

He is speaking. Il parle. He was finishing. Il finissait.

(2) that the French Pres. Part. as such is never used Substantively, and therefore cannot be used as Subject or Object of a Verb, or as Complement of a Youn or Adjective:-

Lying is shameful.
The art of building.
He denies having done it.
We approve of his staying here.

Mentir est honteux. L'art de bâtir. Il nie l'avoir fait. Nous trouvons bon qu'il reste ici.

#### Compare-

The singing (Subst.) of birds.
To be fond of singing.
with—The singing (Adj.) birds.
The birds are singing (Verb).

Le chant des oiseaux. Aimer à chanter. Les oiseaux chantants. Les oiseaux chantent.

DRILL: Conjugate in full—(1) Being ill and having no appetite, I ate nothing, etc.; (2) I intend replying to you; you intend replying to me, etc.; (3) I have been playing the whole evening, etc.; (4) I was fond of dancing, thou wast fond of skating, etc.

B. 1. The lynx has very piercing eyes (= has the eyes very piercing).

2. Have you seen our children playing in the garden?

3. It is (= c'est) by dint of working that you will succeed.

4. By (= en) seizing this opportunity you have at last succeeded.

5. He has twelve children, all living.

6. Being ill, they stayed at home and studied their Latin grammar.

7. Our cock was crowing early in the morning.

8. Is not this boy fond of eating and drinking?

9. We set out in the hope of meeting you.

10. Are you fond of working?

11. We expect returning home to-morrow.

12. What [a] charming view!

## IV.—VERBS CONJUGATED WITH ETRE.

## Vingt-troisième Leçon. (a) La Voix Passive.

Here learn the Passive Voice (p. 19), and notice carefully the Rule of Agreement of a Part. Perf. conjugated with être.

A. 1. Votre exercice latin a-t-il été corrigé?

2. Par qui cet édifice public a-t-il été bâti?

3. Par qui l'élève avait-il été interrompu?

4. Aurait-elle été récompensée, si elle avait travaillé? Oui, et l'exercice corrigé a été copié.

Il a été *bâti* par les Romains.

Il n'avait été interrompu par personne.

Oui, et un prix lui sursit été décerné. 5. Est-il vrai que cette petite fille ait été mordue?

6. Pourquoi la garnison fut-elle *obligée* de capituler?

7. Pourquoi le train n'est-il pas encore arrivé?

Oui, elle a été attaquée par un chien enragé.

Parce que tous les vivres étaient consommés.

Il aura été *retardé* par un accident.

CAUTION.—Bear in mind (a) that in French (save a few exceptions) only Verbs taking a direct object can be used personally in the passive voice; and (b) that not a few Verbs take an indirect object which in English take a direct object; enseigner, to teach, for instance, takes an indirect person-object: as,

I teach him grammar.

I teach my pupils grammar.

Je lui enseigne la grammaire.

J'enseigne la grammaire à mes élèves.

hence—He is taught his grammar, must be rendered in French by: On lui enseigne la grammaire.

or by: La grammaire lui est enseignée.

DRILL: Put all the sentences in A. in the plural.

B. 1. By whom was the city of Carthage founded?

2. Where is the French language spoken?—It is spoken in France, in Belgium, and in the western part of Switzerland.

3. These flourishing towns have been embellished. 4. A great battle was lost by the Romans at Cannæ. 5. The fortress of Sebastopol was well attacked and well defended.

6. His voice would not have been heard if he had not shouted so loud. 7. Is it possible that the old church has been demolished? 8. It was important that we should be well informed. 9. These plants want to be watered.

10. We do not believe that the news (sing.) has been spread by him.

#### Vingt-quatrième Leçon. (b) Verbes exprimant un mouvement, une transition.

Here learn again the Conjugation of Compound Tenses with être (p. 13).

A. 1. Monsieur votre frère est-il arrivé?

2. N'est-ce pas que notre oncle était sorti?

3. Votre cousin est-il enfin descendu?

Non, mais ma sœur est arrivée.

Si, et ma tante aussi était sortie.

· C'est notre cousine qui est descendue.

4. A quelle heure les officiers sont-ils rentrés?

5. Où votre grand'mère serait-elle resté?

6. Croyez-vous qu'elle soit tombée?

7. A quelle heure le courrier sera-t-il parti?

Ils ne sont rentrés que fort tard.

Elle serait restée à la maison.

Je ne crois pas qu'elle soit tombée.

Il sera probablement parti à midi.

Obs.—A few Intransitive Verbs may be conjugated either with avoir or être:—

With avoir to denote the action:

La rivière a baissé aujourd'hui. The river has fallen to-day.

With être to denote the result of the action, the actual state or condition:

La rivière est bien baissée.

The river is very low.

The principal of these Verbs are:-

to hasten. to strand. accourir, échouer, to fail. apparaître, to appear. disparaître, to disappear. embellir. to embellish. baisser, to sink. empirer, to grow worse. changer. to change. grandir, to grow. to grow. monter, to ascend. croître, to increase. rajeunir, to grow young again. déchoir, to decay. to remain (with être). rester, to reside (with avoir). déborder. to overflow. to grow old. descendre, to descend. vieillir, échapper, to escape.

DRILL: Conjugate-

- (1) (in two parallel columns) travailler and tomber in all persons of the Pluperfect Indicative; and in all persons—
- (2) Aussitôt que je fus descendu, je commençai à étudier;
- (3) (Cela arriva) avant que je fusse parti.

B. 1. When have the travellers left for Switzerland?— Yesterday. 2. Has she returned to her native country?
3. Do your friends think that he has arrived? 4. They do not think that he has arrived. 5. She would have remained at home, if she had not been alone. 6. Why have you not come down stairs earlier?—We should have come down earlier if we had had (the) time. 7. Have your cousins Alice and Cecilia entered the room?—Yes, they have.

8. At what o'clock have your sisters come home again?

## Vingt-cinquième Leçon. Accord du Participe Passé conjugué avec avoir.

- (a) The Past Participle of *Transitive* Verbs conjugated with avoir, and of *Reflexive* Verbs, agrees in Gender and Number with its *preceding Direct Object*.\*
  - \* An Object may precede the Verb in the following cases only:—
  - (1) as a Conj. Pers. or Reflex. Pron. : \{ me, te, le, la, lui; nous, vous, les, leur; en. y; se.
  - (2) as a Relative or Interrogative Pronoun: que, lequel, laquelle, etc. (3) as a Noun qualified by—quel, combien de, que de.

Obj. before P.P.—Agreement:

- (1) Voici le livre, l'avez-vous lu?

  Voici la lettre, l'avez-vous lue?

  Voici les livres, les as-tu lus?

  Voici les lettres, les as-tu lues?
- (2) Voici le livre que j'ai lu. Voici la lettre que j'ai lue. Voici les livres que j'ai lus. Voici les lettres que j'ai lus.
- (3) Quelles lettres a-t-il reçues? Combien de lettres a-t-il reçues? Que de lettres il a reçues!

La confiance et l'amitié que vous m'avez témoignées.

(b) The Past Participle agrees with its *Direct* Object (Acc.) only; it never agrees with an *Indirect Remoter* Object (Dat. or Gen.):—

Direct Object—Agreement: Elles nous (vous, les) ont suivis. On les (f.) a bien reques.

A. I. Avez - vous enfin trouvé votre lettre?

- 2. Ont-ils bien accompli leur promesse?
- 3. Pourquoi avez vous vendu votre campagne?
- 4. Leur a-t-il demandé de l'argent?
- 5. Cet enfant a-t-il obéi à son institutrice?
- 6. A-t-elle répondu à sa

P.P. before Obj.—No Agreement: Non, je n'ai pas lu le livre.

Je n'ai pas encore lu la lettre. Je crois avoir lu les livres. Oui, j'ai lu les lettres.

Il a reçu les lettres de son ami. Il a reçu trois lettres.

Il a reçu beaucoup de lettres.

Indirect Object—No Agreement:
Elles nous (vous, leur) ont répondu.
Vous avez fait des fautes dont vos
ennemis ont profilé.

Nous l'avons trouvée.

Non, ils ne l'ont pas accomplie.

Nous l'avons vendue parce que nous avions besoin d'argent.

Oui, il *leur* a aussi *demandé* du pain.

Non, il ne *lui* a pas *obéi*, et il sera fouetté.

Elle lui a repondu hier.

DRILL: In all the sentences in A. put the Object in the *plural* and make the Participle Perf. agree accordingly.

B. I. They have sold their estate!—To whom have they sold it? 2. Where have you met these ladies?—We have met them on the Thames Embankment. 3. Here is the French lady whom I have recommended to you. 4. Why have you recommended her?—Because she deserves to be recommended. 5. Where are the German Grammars that I had lent to you?—Here they are. 6. The new boots that you have selected are too tight!—So much the worse. 7. What difficulties they have experienced! 8. The edifices that the Romans (have) built are remarkable for their solidity. 9. The provinces invaded by the enemies were devastated. 10. Have they replied to you?—They have replied by return of post.

#### Recapitulation.

1. The judges declared that Socrates was guilty.

2. The Romans attacked the Helvetians who were crossing the river.

3. The French attacked the Austrians, who thereupon

crossed the river.

- 4. As soon as the war had been declared the two armies advanced.
- 5. As soon as the winter approaches, the swallows will leave this country.
- 6. Newton was asked how he had succeeded in discovering the law of attraction; he replied: "By thinking of it."
  - 7. I should have been happy if you had succeeded.

8. We are very happy, although we are not rich.

- Although Harpagon was very rich, he was never satisfied.
  - 10. We are delighted that you have consented to it.
- 11. The master does not approve of our answering in English.
- 12. Was not King Alfred fond of early rising?—That is true, and next summer I intend imitating him, for
  - "Early to bed and early to rise,
    Makes a man healthy, wealthy and wise."

#### (c) Verbes Réfléchis. L.—Temps Vingt-sixième Lecon. Simples.

Here learn the Simple Tenses of Reflexive Verbs (p. 20).

A. 1. A quelle heure vous levez-vous?

- 2. Comment vous portezvous?
- 3. Et comment se portent mesdemoiselles vos sœurs?
- 4. Pourquoi cet élève se couche-t-il si tard?
- 5. Ne vous réjouissez-vous pas de son succès?
- 6. Ne vous fâchez pas, je vous en prie!
- 7. Comment ces négociants américains s'enrichissent-ils?
- 8. Comment est-il possible de s'égarer?
- 9. Où vous promenez-vous ordinairement le soir?
- 10. Il ne faut pas se soit hors du village

Nous nous levons à six heures et demie du matin.

Je me porte à merveille.

Elles se portent beaucoup mieux depuis hier, je vous remercie.

Parce qu'il se prépare pour un examen.

Oui, je me réjouis toujours du succès de mes amis.

Mais, je ne me fâche pas du tout.

En achetant du porc salé à bon marché et le vendant

En s'écartant du grand chemin.

Nous nous promenons le long de la rivière.

Proverbe qui s'applique à moquer des chiens qu'on ne bien des circonstances de la vie.

DRILL: Conjugate the answers to Questions 2, 4, and 5, in all persons, singular and plural.

B. Simple Tenses:—1. I wash myself every morning with cold water. 2. Rejoice! the holidays are approaching! 3. How do you do (singular), Henry?—I am very well. 4. And how is your sister?—She is not very well. 5. If you went to bed earlier, you would rise earlier. 6. If you laugh at this boy, he will get angry. 7. At what o'clock did you get up in the morning, when you were in the country? At six o'clock, and sometimes even at half-past five. 9. At half-past five! why, King Alfred used to get up regularly at four o'clock! 10. We have had a poor breakfast, but we shall make up at dinner.

#### Vingt-septième Leçon. Verbes Réfléchis. II.—Temps Composés.

Here learn the Compound Tenses of Reflexive Verbs (p. 21).

A. 1. Où vous êtes-vous enrhumé?

2. Comment se peut-il qu'ils se soient égarés?

3. N'est-ce pas que la ville de Paris s'est beaucoup embellie?

4. Où nos troupes se sontelles rencontrées avec les ennemis?

5. Imaginez-vous qu'il s'est

avisé de parler mal de nous?

6. Ne vous series-vous pas trompé dans votre calcul?

Je *me suis enrhumé* en me baignant.

Ils se sont égarés en s'écartant du sentier.

Oui, je *m'émerveille* chaque fois que j'y retourne.

Au défilé de la montagne, mais ils se sont retirés.

Ah vraiment ; j'espère bien qu'il se ravisera!

Nous ne croyons pas nous être trompés.

CAUTION.—(1) All Reflexive Verbs, without any exception, are conjugated in the Compound Tenses with the Auxiliary Verb &tre.

(2) Notice the use of Reflex. Verbs in the Infinitive:—

Je compte m'amuser; tu comptes l'amuser, etc. Je ne croyais pas m'être trompé, etc.

DRILL: (a) Conjugate the answers to question (1) in the Pluperfect;
(2) in the Conditional Past; (3) in the Future Past.

(b) Conjugate in all persons the sentences contained in Caution (2).

B. 1. You have been mistaken, my dear friend.—I have not been mistaken. 2. The American hunters would have gone astray in the forest, if they had not had such a (=a so) good dog. 3. Just fancy (that) he is ill.

4. No sooner had we approached, when (= that) they withdrew. 5. He would have been angry with (= against) you, if you had not appeased him. 6. We had gone to bed very early. 7. They would have risen late, if we had not awakened them. 8. Have you been for a walk this afternoon?—No, we have thought better of it. 9. What ails you (= have you)?—I have caught a cold. 10. That is because you have exposed yourself to a drawght.

11. Why have you been bathing in this cold weather.

### Vingt-huitième Leçon.

A. I. Ne vous trompezvous pas?

2. Je m'étonne que vous

n'ayez pas prévu cela.

3. Le mot "feu" s'emploiet-il au sens figuratif?

4. Combien le beurre se vend-il au marché?

5. Faut-il que je m'acquitte envers vous?

6. Pourquoi se sont-elles embrasseés?

Verbes Réfléchis (Suite).

Je suis sûr de ne pas me tromper.

Je ne m'en doutais pas.

Mais oui, il se prend dans le sens du mot "ardeur."

Il se vend deux francs la livre.

Oui, qui paye (or, paie) ses dettes s'enrichit.

Parce qu'elles s'aiment.

CAUTIONS.—(1) A great many Verbs used reflexively in French are not reflexive in Englis<sup>1</sup>; they are either rendered by the Passive voice, or by an Active Verb used intransitively:—

Je m'appelle, I am called. Je m'etonne, I am astonished. Je me doute de, I suspect.

Je me trompe, I am mistaken. Je m'empresse, I hasten. Je m'aperçois, I become aware, etc.

Thus also the following, which in this sense are generally used in the 3rd person only:-

Se vendre, to be sold, to sell. s'employer, to be used.

s'entendre, to be understood. s'éclaircir, to clear up, etc.

(2) The Reflexive Form of Conjugation is also used for Reciprocal Verbs, i.e. Verbs the action of which mutually reacts on (i.e. is reciprocated between) the two or more persons which form the joint subject:

Ils se haïssent.

They hate one another, or each other.

To avoid any possible ambiguity, l'un l'autre or les uns les autres, is added:-

Ils se flattent.

They flatter themselves.

Ils se flattent l'un l'autre. They flatter one another (two persons). Ils se flattent les uns les autres. They flatter each other (more than two).

DRILL: Conjugate—Je ne m'étonne pas ; je me réjouis ; je me défends, in the Pres. Indic. ; Pres. Perf. (Indef.); and Imperative.

B. 1. I think you are mistaken?—We are not mistaken. 2. I am surprised that he has not returned to London.

3. Dutch cheese sells [at] a shilling a = the pound.

4. When the wolves are pressed by hunger, they tear each 5. Why do they always flatter one pieces. another?—Because they are both conceited coxcombs.

6. Is the verb "douter" used reflexively?—Yes, in the sense of "to suspect,"

#### Vingt-neuvième Leçon. V.—Verbs Impersonnels.

Here learn the Impersonal Verbs (pp. 22, 23).

A. r. Quel temps fait-il aujourd'hui?

2. Pleut-il encore?

3. Y a-t-il longtemps que vous êtes revenu?

4. Y aura-t-il beaucoup de monde au concert?

5. De quoi s'agit-il?

6. Que faut-il pour faire de la salade?

7. Est-ce qu'il tonne?

8. Fait-il froid dans votre pays?

9. Faut-il que je recommence?

ro. Ne fait-il pas sombre ce soir?

Je crois qu'il fait très beau.

Non, il ne pleut plus; il fait du soleil.

Il y a déjà quinze jours que je suis de retour.

Non, il n'y aura guère de monde; il neige.

Il est arrivé un accident.

Il faut du sel, du poivre, de l'huile, du vinaigre, de la moutarde, et de la laitue.

Oui, ne voyez-vous pas qu'il fait des éclairs?

S'il y fait froid? je crois qu'oui; il y gèle à pierre fendre.

Oui, il importe que vous recommenciez.

Non, il fait clair de lune.

DRILL: Conjugate in all tenses—(1) il ne s'agit pas de s'amuser, etc.;
(2) "il y a" interrogatively and negatively, adding an appropriate.
Noun used partitively; as,

Y a-t-il du lait? Il n'y a point d'huile; etc.

B. 1. Does it rain?—No, it snows. 2. Has it been lightening?—Yes, it has also been thundering. 3. Are there not several churches in this town?—Yes, there are seven old churches. 4. Is it warm to-day?—No, it is very cold. 5. It is important that you stay another (=still) fortnight. 6. An accident will happen (=there will happen an.....) if you are not more cautious. 7. How long is it since they have returned?—It is a week. 8. Does the sun shine?—No, it is foggy. 9. In winter it freezes, in summer it hails to What was (Impf.) the question about?—It was about your proposal.

# Trentième Leçon. VI.—Verbes Réguliers. Remarques Orthographiques.

Here learn the orthographic peculiarities of Regular Verbs (pp. 16, 17).

A. 1. Commençons enfin à travailler, mes amis!

2. Espérez-vous une récom-

3. Pourquoi ne mangezvous pas?

4. Qui est-ce qui nous appelle?

5. Pourquoi ces garçons jettent-ils des pierres dans votre jardin?

6. Pourquoi voulez-vous que nous copiions cette règle?

7. Pourquoi Gribouille se jette-t-il dans l'eau?

Mais, vous voyez bien que nous avons déjà commencé.

Oui, j'en espère une bonne.

Nous ne mangeons pas, parce que nous n'avons pas faim.

C'est nous qui vous appelons.

C'est pour *m'ennuyer*, mais ils me le *paieront*.

Pour que vous ne l'oublitez pas.

De crainte de la pluie.

- DRILL: Write out—(1) in all persons of the Present Indicative:—
  chanceler, to totter; se promener, to walk; répéter, to repeat; payer,
  to pay; (2) in all persons of Imperfect Indicative:—manger, to eat;
  commencer, to begin.
- B. 1. Now, let us begin to work! 2. Three powerful princes were threatening Charles XII., but he did not lose courage. 3. This wind will bring us (some) rain. 4. The reading of a good book elevates the soul. 5. The return of (the) spring revives all (the) nature. 6. This boy cleans our boots and shoes very well. 7. The wind and the sun dry the ground. 8. They are putting the horses to the carriage. 9. Which French author do you prefer?—I prefer Molière to all the others. 10. What was he eating just now? -(Some) Roast<sup>2</sup> chestnuts<sup>1</sup>. 11. Athens flourished under 12. The banners have been consecrated. Pericles. 14. Why do He (has) blessed his children before dying. you hate him?—I do not hate him; it is he that hates me. 15. In summer the sun rises at four o'clock.

VII.—VERBES IRRÉGULIERS. PREMIÈRE CONJUGAISON. Trente-et-unième Leçon. Apprenes les Verbes aller et envoyer.

- A. 1. Irez-vous voir votre cousine ce soir?
- 2. Comment vont vos affaires?
- 3. Iriez-vous à pied ou à cheval?
- 4. Etes-vous allées vous promener, mesdemoiselles?
- 5. Il est malade, n'enverrezvous pas chez lui?
  - 6. Cet habit lui va-t-il?
    7. Allons nous promener!

Non, mais j'irai la voir après-demain.

Elles vont très mal, elles vont de mal en pis.

J'irais en voiture, si j'étais

à votre place.

Oui, mademoiselle, et en chemin nous sommes allées prendre nos cousines.

Il va sans dire que nous enverrons chez lui.

Il ne lui va pas mal.

Par où irons-nous?-Par là.

Expressions Idiomatiques.

Aller au devant de quelqu'un.

Aller à la rencontre de quelqu'un.
Aller en voiture.
Aller en bateau.
Aller à pied. Aller à cheval.
Aller se promener.
Aller chercher; aller trouver.
Aller voir; aller prendre.
Comment allez-vous?
Comment cela va-t-il.?
Ma santé va de mieux en mieux.
Cet habit lui va bien.

Cet habit ful va bien.
Ces plumes vont bien.
Envoyer chercher; envoyer dire.
Drill: Conjugate—(1) je vais s

DRILL: Conjugate—(1) je vais me promener in the Pres. Ind., Past Indef., and Fut. Pres.; (2) it faut que i'aille and it me faut aller (impers.) in all pers. sing. and pl.

B. 1. Where are you going, my friend?—I am going to the post-office. 2. I should go with you, if it (=\alpha) were not so far. 3. To-morrow morning we shall go for a row.

4. I have gone with him, and she has gone with her sister.

5. We shall go this way, and they will go that way. 6. Shall we walk, or shall we drive? 7. How art thou, Fred?—So so. 8. This new hat fits you very well!—Does it, though?

9. We must go [and] meet him. 10. We were oblined to go. 11. Are you glad that they have gone? 12. We were sorry that they had gone.

To go and meet some one (in a ceremonial way).

To go and meet some one.
To go for a drive (to drive).

To go for a row.
To go on foot, to walk. To ride.

To go for a walk.

To go for (to fetch); to seck out. To go and see; to call for.

How do you do? How are you?

My health is improving. This coat suits him. These pens write well. To fetch; to send word.

# Trente-denxième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe S'en aller (pp. 24, 25).

#### A. 1. Allez-vous partir?

- 2. Où donc alliez-vous tout à l'heure?
- 3. Ne vous en allez pas encore!
- 4. Monsieur Duroc est-il chez lui?
- 5. Allons nous-en, il ne fait pas bon ici!
  - 6. Avez-vous bien dormi?

Oui, nous allons partir pour la Suisse.

J'allais me baigner.

Il faut que je m'en aille.

Non, il s'en est allé ce matin.

Mais, où donc voulez-vous que nous allions?—N'importe où.

Pas du tout: j'allais m'endormir quand on cria au feu.

#### Temps Idiomatiques.

Je vais rester, tu vas rentrer, il va se promener, nous allons nous amuser, vous allez vous faire punir, ils vont mettre à la voile,

J'allais lui envoyer dire de rester, tu allais le trouver, etc. I am about (I am going) to stay. thou art about to return home. he is going for a walk, we are going to have some fun. you will get yourselves punished. they are going to set sail.

I was (just) about (going) to send him word to stay. thou wast (just) about to seek him out, etc.

DRILL: Conjugate the above idiomatic sentences in full; (2) Conjugate the answers to questions 1, 2, 3, and 4 in A. in all persons, s. and pl.

B. 1. I am not going away yet. 2. We are about to leave; shall you go with us? 3. Have your sisters gone away?—No, they have not yet gone away. 4. We should also go away, if it were not so late. 5. We must go away, must we not?—Yes, it is important that you should go away. 6. Why?—Because it is about to rain or to snow. 7. Go away, you idle fellows (=idlers that you are) / 8. We were just about to bathe, when it began to lighten and to thunder. 9. I should have gone away long ago, if I had not been so it. 10. Let us not yet go away!

#### DEUXIÈME CONJUGAISON.

Trente-troisième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes dormir, mentir. sentir, servir, partir, sortir, se repentir (pp. 26, 27).

A. 1. Vous sentez - vous soulagé?

2. A quoi cela sert-il?

3. Vous servez-vous de ce cahier?

- 4. Ne vous repentez-vous pas d'avoir négligé le français et l'allemand?
  - 5. Avez-vous faim?

Désirez-vous qu'on serve le souper?

7. Quand partirez - vous

pour la Suisse?

- 8. Comment dit-on français pour "still waters run deep"?
- 9. A quelle heure vous êtes-vous endormi?
- 10. Comment rendez-vous "silence gives consent"?

Je me sens un peu mieux,

merci.

Cela ne sert à rien du tout. Non, pas à présent ; servezvous-en, je vous prie.

Oui, je m'en repens, je sens que j'ai eu tort de négliger les langues vivantes.

J'ai bon appétit.

Oui, faites servir chaud, et dépêchez-vous.

Je ne pars pas encore, je ne me sens pas assez bien.

"Il n'est pire eau que l'eau qui dort."

Je *m'endormis* à minuit moins un quart.

"Oui ne dit mot consent."

Se sentir bien'; se sentir mal. Servir le dîner. On a servi! Vous êtes servi! Ne servir à rien. Ne servir de rien. Servir de... Se servir. Se servir de. A partir d'aujourd'hui. DRILL: Conjugate-

Expressions Idiomatiques. To feel well; to feel ill (sick). To serve up. Dinner (supper, etc.) is on the table. To be good for nothing. To be of no avail. To do the office of a...
To help one's self. To make use of. From this day forward.

(1) je ne me sens pas bien, in all persons of Pres. and Impf.

(2) je me sers de mon livre, in all persons of Pres. and Past Indef. B. 1. He is going out. 2. She is going away!—I thought (that) she had already gone away. 3. My little brother is going to (the) school. 4. Do you feel the draught? —No, I do not feel it now. 5. Do you consent to it (=y)?

—No, I do not consent to it. 6. Well, you will repent of it (=en). 7. Do you feel sleepy?—Yes, I feel very sleepy. 8. Is the dinner on the table? 9. Have you made use of this German dictionary?—Yes, I use (= use myself of) every day. 10. How do you feel to-day?—I feel very well Trente-quatrième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes bouillir, faillir, vêtir, cueillir, couvrir, etc. (pp. 26-29).

A. I. L'eau bout-elle?

2. Dès qu'elle bouillira, mettez-y un œuf!

3. Qu'avez-vous, mon ami?

4. La rivière est-elle couverte de glace?

5. Pourquoi n'ouvrez-vous pas la fenêtre?

6. Quand cueillerez-vous vos cerises?

7. Couvrez-vous, je vous en prie!

8. De quoi les indigènes

de ce pays se vêtent-ils?

9. Fermez les yeux, et

ouvrez la bouche!

10. J'ai bien souffert,

allez!

Non, elle ne bout pas encore.

Je n'y manquerai pas.

J'ai failli me casser la jambe pour avoir couru trop vite.

Oui, et les montagnes sont

couvertes de neige.

Parce que la porte est ouverte.

Nous ne les cueillerons pas avant la mi-juillet.

Eh bien, je me couvrirai, aussi bien y a-t-il un courant d'air ici.

Ils se vêtent de peaux.

Je vous remercie.

Je suis fâché que vous ayez tant souffert.

Expressions Idiomatiques.

J'ai failli tomber. Ouvrir de grands yeux. Se couvrir; se découvrir.

Cette porte ouvre sur le jardin.

I nearly fell; I was well-night To stare. [falling. To put one's hat on; to take one's hat off. This door leads to the garden.

DRILL: Conjugate—(1) answers to Questions 3 and 6 in A. in all persons of Pres. Perf.; (2) j'ai failli tomber, in all persons of Past Indef.

B. I. You will gather what (= ce que) you have sown.

2. When will the Exhibition be opened? 3. When will they gather the strawberries in the garden?—When they are ripe.

4. We attacked the enemies, who [then] fled. 4(a). They attacked the enemy who were advancing. 5. Let us put on our hats. 6. When will the water boil at last? 7. The Alps are covered with snow even in summer. 8. He has suffered much! 9. The Crusaders were assailed by a swarm of Saracens. 10. We nearly missed the train.

#### Apprenez le Verbe venir (pp. 30, 31). Trente-cinquième Leçon.

- A. 1. Viendrez-vous avec moi?
- 2. Ma proposition vous convient-elle?
- 3. Etes-vous parvenus à le persuader?
- venez vous 4. A qui d'ouvrir la porte?
- 5. Il est évident que vous avez tort, en conviendrezvous enfin?
- 6. Vous souvenez-vous de la guerre en Crimée?
- 7. Qu'est devenu votre joli chien?
  - 8. Vous en souvenez-vous?

Je viendrais, si j'avais le temps.

Oui, elle me conviendrait, si elle était sérieuse.

Non, nous n'en viendrons iamais à bout.

La porte était déjà grande ouverte.

Non, au contraire, nous en disconvenons.

Comment m'en souviendrais-je, puisque je n'étais pas encore au monde?

Je viens d'en faire cadeau

à ma cousine.

Si je m'en souviens!

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Venir parler. Venir de parler. Venir à parler. Qu'est-elle devenue? En venir aux coups (aux mains).

To come and (i.e. in order to) speak. To have just spoken. To happen (to chance) to speak. What has become of her? To come to blows (to close quarters).

CAUTION.—Venir, being a Verb of motion from one place to another (see Lesson 26), is conjugated in its compound tenses with être.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons-

- Je suis revenu ce matin.
   Je reviendrai demain.
   Je viens de le voir.

- (4) Je venais de me lever;
  (5) Je m'en souviens.
  (6) Je m'en suis souvens.
- B. 1. When will he come back?—He will not come back before Christmas. 2. What is the difference between "retourner" and "revenir"?-" Retourner" signifies " to go back," and "revenir" signifies "to come back." 3. Has your friend returned to London?—Yes, he returned the day before yesterday. 4. Do you agree now that I am right?— No, I don't agree that you are (Subj.) right. 5. Do you remember our old French master?—O yes, I remember him very well. 6. What has become of him?—He has just come back. 7. Wait a minute, my sister is coming. had just gone out.

#### Trente-sixième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe tenir (pp. 30, 31).

A. 1. Que tenez-vous à la main?

2. A qui appartient ce beau château?

3. Pourquoi tient-il un pareil langage?

4. Y tenez-vous beaucoup?

5. Pourquoi vous êtes-vous abstenu de vin?

6. De quoi nous entretiendrons-nous?

7. Tenez-vous à aller au spectacle ce soir?

8. Je voudrais savoir à quoi m'en tenir!

Un exemplaire d'Homère auquel je tiens beaucoup.

Il appartient au Comte de Grandville.

Parce qu'il ne peut pas se

Oui, j'y tiens beaucoup.

Parce que je n'y tenais as.

Nous nous entretiendrons de propos sérieux.

Oui, je viens de retenir une loge.

Tenez - vous donc tranquille!

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Tenir à une chose.

Tenir à faire quelque chose.
Tenir bon (ferme).
Tenir tête à...
Se tenir debout.
Se tenir droit.
Se tenir tranquille (à l'écart).
S'en tenir à...
Il ne tient qu'à vous.
DRILL: Conjugate—

To care for (to be very particular about) a thing.
To be anxious to do a thing.
To hold one's ground.
To hold one's own against; to resist.
To stand. To stand upright.
To stand (sit, etc.) straight.
To keep quiet (aloof).
To abide by...(to be satisfied with...)
It rests entirely with you.

- (1) the answers to Questions 4, 5, 6, and 8 in all pers. sing. and pl. (2) Je tiens à rester, in all pers. sing. and pl. of Pres. and Fut.
- (3) Il faut que je me tienne tranquille, in all pers. sing. and pl.

B. I. I always<sup>2</sup> keep<sup>1</sup> my promise. 2. We shall keep quiet. 3. Why does he abstain from wine?—He does not care for it (i.e. to it = y). 4. What (= que) do these vessels contain?—They contain nothing but water. 5. Does this orchard belong to the gardener? 6. They were talking about (= of) the elections. 7. They will obtain nothing from him. 8. Do not detain me, I am in a great hurry. 9. Is he anxious to go out? 10. They are very particular about this affair. 11. He is holding his watch in his (= the) hand.

12. Whose are (= to whom belong) these apples, pears, and Plums?—They belong to the gardener.

#### Trente-septième Lecon. Apprenez les Verbes acquérir, mourir, courir, gésir (pp. 30, 31).

- A. 1. Le roi est-il mort?
- 2. Est-il vrai qu'elle se meurt?
- 3. N'avez vous pas dit qu'elle était morte?
  - 4. Où courez-vous si vite?
- 5. Par qui l'Angleterre futelle conquise en 1066?
- 6. De quoi madame votre tante est-elle morte?
- 7. Comment s'est-il acquis les bonnes grâces de ses supérieurs?
- 8. Que dit le poète Boileau de la fourmi?
- 9. Comment le bon ton s'acquiert-il?

Oui, le roi est *mort*! vive le roi !

Oui, elle n'a plus qu'un souffle de vie.

Non, mais sa vie court les plus grands dangers.

l'accours auprès de vous. Par Guillaume le Conquérant.

Elle est morte de vieil-

A force de viles flatteries: c'est un flagorneur.

Elle jouit l'hiver des biens conquis pendant l'été.

Par la fréquentation de personnes bien élevées.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Faire mourir. Se mourir. Courir le monde. Il (impers.) court un bruit. Le bruit court. Mauvaise herbe ne meurt point. C'est donc là que gît le lièvre.

To put to death. To be dying. To roam; to travel. There is a rumour (report) abroad. It is reported (bruited). Ill weeds grow apace.

#### Drill: Conjugate—

- (1) J'acquiers des richesses, in all pers. sing. and pl. of Pres., Pret. (2) J'accours à son secours, and Future.
  (3) avant que je meure, in all persons of Subj. Pres. and Impf.
- B. 1. These merchants are acquiring great wealth. I am dying of thirst; I have been running the whole afternoon. 3. We shall all<sup>2</sup> die<sup>1</sup>. 4. Where are you running so fast?—I am running to the fire. 5. If you run so quickly in this great heat, you will run the risk of ruining your 6. We have run through the whole country. 7. When did (the) King Louis XVI. die?—On the 23rd of 8. The Romans conquered the whole January, . 1793. world.

### TROISIÈME CONJUGAISON.

# Trente-huitième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes recevoir, concevoir, apercevoir, décevoir (pp. 32, 33).

- A. 1. J'espère que vous avez reçu de ses nouvelles!
- 2. Concevez-vous un pareil procédé?

3. Vous apercevez-vous de

votre erreur?

- 4. N'aperçûtes vous pas tout à coup une lumière éclatante?
- 5. N'avez-vous pas été déçus dans votre attente?
- 6. Quand recevront-ils leur récompense?
- 7. J'exige qu'on reçoive mes observations avec déférence!

Je reçois à l'instant la nouvelle de son départ pour l'Australie!

Je conçois facilement votre surprise.

Non, je ne m'en aperçois

Oui, nous aperçûmes aussi un arc-en-ciel.

Oui, les espérances que nous avions conçues ne se sont pas réalisées.

Ils l'auraient déjà reçue, s'ils avaient mieux travaillé.

Cela se conçoit (see Lesson 30).

DRILL: Conjugate—

- (1) Il faut que je le reçoive bien,
  (2) Je ne m'aperçois pas de mon erreur, in all persons sing. and pl.
- B. I. I receive every day letters from my friends. 2. What presents have you received on your birthday?—I received a beautiful doll from my dear aunt. 3. Why don't you receive them more kindly? 4. Do you wish me to receive him this evening? 5. They perceived that he was very ill. 6. My dearest hopes were deceived. 7. We conceived a high opinion of his courage. 8. It is necessary that you receive their offers. 9. As soon as he perceived me, he left the room. 10. It was important that he should receive your letter at once. 11. Must we go away? 12. I do not think he remembers the circumstance.

#### Apprenez le Verbe devoir (pp. 32, 33). Trente-neuvième Leçon.

A. 1. Combien est-ce que je vous dois?

2. A qui doit-on l'invention de la boussole?

3. Qui a sali ces bancs?

4. Que doit - on à ses parents?

5. Aurait-il dû agir ainsi?

6. Pourquoi devez - vous tant d'argent?

7. Vous ne devriez pas vous arroger ce droit!

8. Quand devez-vous retourner à Douvres?

o. Il doit faire bien froid en Laponie, n'est-ce-pas?

**Devoir** is used in many different meanings :-

sance, etc.) Je lui dois cet avancement.

(2) Je dois obéir l à mes

e *devrais* obéir J'aurais du obéir | parents.

(3) Je dois passer la soirée chez eux. Je devais passer la soirée chez eux. I was to have spent I with them.

(4) Je dois partir aujourd'hui même. Je *devais* partir il y a longtemps. Je dus J'ai dû partir à l'instant. Je devrais partir ce soir. J'aurais du partir ce matin.

(5) Je crois devoir J'ai cru devoir vous dire cela.

(6) Vous devez être bien fatigué.

Vous avez du être bien aise.

Vous me devez deux mille francs.

On la doit à un Italien.

C'est ce méchant garçon qui doit les avoir salis.

Nous leur devons respect et obéissance.

Non, il devrait avoir honte de sa conduite.

Parce que j'ai dû faire de grandes dépenses pour ma santé.

Te dois ne vous compte de mes actions.

J'y dois retourner ce soir même.

Je vous en réponds!

(1) Je lui dois de l'argent (de l'obéis- I owe him money (obedience, etc.)

I am indebted to him for this promotion. I must (=it is my duty to) obey, etc.

I should (= ought to) obey, etc. ( I should ( = ought to) have obeyed.

I am to spend the evening

I have to leave this very day. I was to have left long ago.

I had to leave instantly.

I ought to leave this evening. I ought to have left this morning.

I think it right to tell you that. I thought it right to tell you that.

You must (i.e. cannot but be very tired.

You must (i.e. cannot but) have been very glad.

In the inverted construction—dussé-je mourir, observe:—

(a) that the inversion is, as in English, tantamount to a Conditional or Concessive Conjunction:—

Were I to die! = Though I were to die! Dussé-je mourir! = Quand-même je devrais mourir!

- (b) that in French the Subj. Impf. or Plupf. (here dusse) may be used for the Cond. Pres. or Cond. Perf.
- N.B.—Dussé-je instead of dusse-je, for the sake of euphony, as in the case of "parlé-je?" etc.
- CAUTION.—(1) Render should by devoir only when equivalent to ought to. (See 2.)
- (2) In accordance with the General Rule (Lesson 19) the verb-complement of devoir must be in the Infinitive; notice especially the last examples of 2, 3, 4, 5, where the English construction is quite different.
- DRILL: Conjugate in all persons sing. and pl. the above sentences in their respective tenses.
- B. 1. They owe you nothing, do they? 2. I beg your (=you) pardon, they owe me two thousand three hundred and eighty-two pounds. 3. I am indebted to them for the good situation that I have obtained. 4. Must I tell you the truth?—Yes, the plain truth! 5. Well, allow me to (=de) tell you that you owe some money. 6. I have been obliged to borrow ninety-eight pounds at six per cent. 7. But you ought not to have borrowed it from (=a) this usurer.
- 8. We are to spend next winter in the Riviera. 9. And we were to have spent last winter at Montreux, on the Lake of Geneva. 10. It must be very mild there, must it not? 11. They have to be at home punctually at twelve o'clock. 12. Ought you to have acted thus? 13. You ought to be ashamed of your behaviour. 14. We were to [have] set sail [on] Monday.
- 15. That (= cela) must have grieved you very much.
  16. What am I to think of this delay? 17. We think it right to warn you. 18. He thought [it] right to abstain from all interference. 19. You must be very angry with him. 20. And he must have been sorry for that mishap.
  21. After these examples I think (that) you must thoroughly understand the different constructions of the verb devoir.

## Quarantième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes savoir et pouvoir (pp. 32, 33).

- A. 1. Lequel savez-vous le mieux, l'italien ou l'allemand?
- 2. Votre ami sait-il bien les mathématiques?
- 3. Ne lui savez-vous pas bon gré de vous avoir si bien traité?
- 4. Ce savant *sait*-il bien enseigner?
- 5 Savez-vous ce que je sais?
- 6. Je sais que vous les connaissez.
- 7. Je *connais* un homme qui sait huit langues.
- 8. *Pouvez*-vous me dire si M. Blanc est chez lui?
- 9. Puis-je me chauffer les pieds, monsieur?
  - 10. Bacon était-il savant?
  - \* Savoir is used in several ways:

(I) Je sais cela (la vérité, etc.) Je sais le grec.

(2) Je sais nager. Je sais parler français.

Je sais parier français.

Nous savons beaucoup mieux l'allemand.

Pas que je sache.

Je ne lui en sais pas mauvais gré.

A merveille; je ne sache personne qu'on puisse lui comparer.

Je sais ce que vous savez.

Et moi, je sais que vous ne les connaissez pas.

Et moi, je *connais* un homme qui *connaît* tous les habitants de ce village.

Je ne *saurais* \* vous le dire.

Oui, mais prenez garde de ne pas vous brûler; le feu est vif!

Oui, il savait tout ce qu'on pouvait savoir de son temps.

I know that (the truth, etc.)

I can (i.e. know how to) swim.

I can (know how to) speak French.

I know Greek.

## CAUTION 1.—To know must be rendered:—

(a) by savoir, if used in the sense of—to know how to, to have learnt how to, to be aware of, i.e. to know mentally.

Je ne *sais* pas chanter.

Je le sais bien.

Je sais "que vous l'estimez." +

(b) by connaître (see Lesson 58), if used in the sense of—to be acquainted with, to know by sight, by hearing, or by any other sense.

Je connais cet homme. Je connais cet air. I do not know how to sing. [of it. I know it well=I am fully aware I know that you esteen him.

I know this man.
I know (recognise) this tune, i.e. 1
have heard it before.

#### + CAUTION 2 .- Can must be rendered : -

(a) by savoir, if used in the sense of—to know how to, to have learnt how to:—

Je ne sais pas patiner.

I cannot skate (I never learnt it).

(b) by pouvoir, if used in the sense of—to be able to, to be allowed to:— Je ne puis pas patiner aujourd'hui. I cannot skate to-day.

#### DRILL: Conjugate-

- (1) je ne sais pas chanter, in all pers. of the Present, Preterite, and Future Present.
- (2) Il faut que je sache, Il faudrait que je susse, (faudrait) to be left unchanged.
- B. 1. Do you know German?—Yes, I can speak German. 2. Can you lift up this table?—No, I cannot (it), it is too heavy. 3. Can you tell me after which verbs we may leave out "pas"?—Why, of course; after pouvoir, savoir, oser, cesser, bouger, (n')avoir garde de, especially if they are followed by (=of) an Infinitive. 4. How do you render "might have" in French?—By the Conditional Past of pouvoir. 5. Might not you have known that?—I might have known it. 6. As a rule, men who know little speak much, and those who know much speak little. 7. All that (=tout ce que) I know is (=this is) that I know nothing. 8. We knew that you had risen very late. 9. We learnt that you had gone to bed late. 10. When shall you know whether he will come?
- 11. He does not want me to know the truth. 12. If I knew that he is ill, I should call on him. 13. Know that I am a Roman! 14. You must know that I am acquainted with many Romans. 15. You ought to have known that long ago. 16. May I stay at home until you come back?

  —No. 17. Shall you be enabled to accompany me this evening? 18. Do you think (that) he knows his lesson?

  —I know that he does not know it. 19. Have they been able to reach the opposite shore? 20. He has managed to win the good graces of his superiors.

#### Quarante-et-unième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe vouloir (pp. 32, 33).

- A. 1. Voulez vous m'accompagner un petit bout de chemin?
- 2 Veux-tu que je t'accompagne jusque chez toi?

agne jusque chez toi? 3. Voudrais-tu du vin

rouge ou du vin blanc?

- 4. Quelle différence y a-til entre "je veux" et "je voudrais"?
- 5. Quelle observation y a-t-il à faire sur l'Impératif de "vouloir"?
- 6. Eh bien! veuillez me dire quelle heure il est!
- 7. Savez-vous le grec?— Non.—Comment se peut-il que vous ne sachiez pas cette belle langue?
- 8. Quelqu'un demanda à Diogène à quelle heure il devait dîner!
- 9. Que veut dire le proverbe, "Qui refuse muse"?

Je le veux bien.

Ne te dérange pas, j'irai tout seul.

Je présère le vin rouge.

"Je veux" exprime une résolution; "je voudrais" n'exprime qu'un souhait.

L'expression "veuillez" n'est impérative que pour la forme; elle veut dire: Ayez l'obligeance.

Il est temps de se coucher.

Que voulez-vous? on ne peut pas tout savoir.

Si tu es riche, quand tu voudras; si tu es pauvre, quand tu pourras.

Qui ne prend le bien quand il peut, Ne le trouve pas quand il veut

**Vouloir** is used in different ways :—

(a) to command, to order, followed by a Verb in Subjunctive (see Lesson 13), or by a Direct Object:—

Votre père veut que vous obéissiez. La loi le veut. Your father insists on your obeying.
The law commands it.

(b) to be willing, to intend, to want, followed by an Infinitive (see Lesson 23):—

Je veux partir ce matin.

I want to set out this morning.

(c) to want, to want to have, to wish, followed by Noun- (or Pronoun)
Object:—

Que voulez-vous? Je veux mon argent. What do you want? I want my money. En voulez-vous? Oui, donnez-m'en. Do you want some? Yes, give me som (d) If used in the Conditional, it expresses a deferential wish:—

Je voudrais bien le voir. J'aurais bien voulu le voir. Je voudrais bien l'avoir vu. Je voudrais un peu de vin. I should like to see him.
I should have liked to see him.
I wish I had seen him.
I should like to have some wine.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Je lui veux du bien.
Je lui veux du mal.
Je lui en veux.
Voulez-vous bien vous taire!
Vouloir dire; as,
Que veut dire ce mot?
Que me voulez-vous?
Je le veux bien.

I wish him (her) well.
I owe him (her) a grudge. I bear him ill will.
Do be quiet!
To signify.
What does this word mean?
What can I do for you?
I am agreeable. I consent to (grant) it. Be it so.

# CAUTIONS.—(1) Bear in mind the rule given in Lesson 13:— Je veux venir. Je veux qu'il revienne.

(2) I wish you a good morning.

Je vous souhaite le bon jour.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons of their respective tenses, the sentences contained in (b) and (c).

B. I. I want to stay here. 2. I wanted you to stay. 3. I should like to set out. 4. I should like him to set out. 5. He wanted to come. 6. What do you want?—I want him to go. 7. Will you accompany me? 8. Shall you accompany me? 9. How many copies do you want [to have]?—I should like to have at least a dozen copies. 10. Have the kindness to explain this rule to me. 11. We should like to see you to-morrow.—We are quite agreeable. 12. Why do you bear me ill-will?—I do not bear you a grudge; I wish you well. 13. We wish you a happy new year. 14. Does the pupil know Latin?—I wish he did know it, he would know the genders of French nouns much better.

#### Quarante-deuxième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe Impersonnel Falloir (pp. 32, 33).

- vous faut-il A. I. Que (qu'est-ce qu'il vous faut)?
  - 2. Que faut-il à vos amis?
- 3. Que faut-il aux plantes pour croître?
- 4. Combien d'argent vous faudra-t-il pour faire voyage?
- Je croyais qu'il vous en faudrait davantage.
- 6. Que lui faudrait-il pour réussir?
- 7. Croyez-vous que Francois soit un homme sûr?
- 8. Ce monsieur a-t-il du savoir-vivre?
  - o. Cela vous va-t-il?

Il me faut une douzaine d'œufs.

Il leur faut une centaine de francs.

Il leur faut de la pluie et du soleil.

Il me faudra environ deux cent cinquante francs.

Oui, il m'en faudrait bien davantage, si je n'étais pas si économe.

Il lui faudrait un peu plus d'énergie.

Oui, c'est l'homme qu'il vous faut.

Oui, il est très comme il

Oui, c'est précisément ce qu'il me faut.

Falloir is always used impersonally, and in several different constructions and meanings:

(a) with a Noun- (or Pronoun) Complement—

Il me faut du vin.

Il *te faut* de l'argent.

Il lui faut de la viande.

Il lui faut de l'eau.

Il faut une plume à cet écolier.\*

Il nous faut des raisins.

Il vous faut des épiceries.

Il leur faut des épices.

I want (some) wine.

Thou wantest (some) money.

He wants (some) meat.

She wants (some) water This pupil wants a pen.

We want (some) grapes.

You want (some) groceries.

They want (some) spices.

\* Or-Il faut à cet écolier une plume.

#### and so with other Tenses:-

Il me faudrait trois exemplaires.

Il ne croyait pas qu'il me fallut un He did not think I wanted a guid guide.

guide.

Il me fallait (fallut) bien de l'argent. I wanted much money.

Il me faudra beaucoup de patience. I shall want much patience.

I should want three copies.

Il m'aurait fallu plus de lait.

I should have wanted more milk.

Crois-tu qu'il me faille un passeport?

Do you think I want a passport?

Do you think I want a passport?

#### INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

Me faut-il tant de bagage?

Do I want so much luggage? Il ne vous faut guère qu'une valise. You want hardly anything but a portmanteau.

Combien lui faut-il d'argent? Combien vous faut-il de tapis? How much money does he want? How many carpets do you want?

#### DRILL: Conjugate in all persons singular and plural—

- (1) il me faut... with Masc. Nouns sing. used for (2) il m'a fallu... ,, M. and F. Nouns pl. Object.

  \[ \begin{align\*}
   A \text{Noun-Object qualified by an Adv.}
  \end{align\*} (3) il me faudra... (4) il m'aurait fallu... "\ of quantity. See § 12.
- (5) Combien me faut-il de..., any Noun-Object. (6) cela me va-t-il? Does that suit me?

### CAUTION .- In using Personal Pronouns as Objects, distinguish carefully between-

(a) PERSONAL.			(b) Reflexive.				
(1) Direct Ob		(2) Indirect Object. (Dative.)		Direct and Indirect Object. (Accusative and Dative.)			
On me vo	it. Il me	faut.	Je	me	lave (pr	ocure,	
On te voi	it. Il te	faut.	Tu	te	laves.	[etc.)	
On le (la) voi	it. Il <b>lui</b>	faut.	Il (elle	) <b>s</b> e	lave.		
On nous voi	it. Il nous	faut.	Nous	nous	lavons.		
On vous voi	it. Il vous	faut.	Vous	vous	lavez.		
On les voi	it. Il leur	faut.	Ils	80	lavent.		

It will be seen that for the first and second person sing. and plur., the forms are the same throughout; but not for the third.

B. 1. He wants some bread, cheese, butter, beer, and radishes. 2. They want milk and water to (= pour) quench their thirst. 3. Do you want any gloves?—Yes, we want white kid gloves. 4. What do you (sing.) want?—I want a Greek grammar. 5. Why do you want so many books?— To prepare for my examination. 6. How much cloth shall you want?—We shall want at least ten yards. 7. How many horses would they have wanted for their expedition? 8. Do you think that he wants more money?—I do. 9. What does this idler want?—Stirrup leather. 10. That is exactly what you want too. 11. Why does he bear me a grudge?—He! why, he wishes you well.

# Quarante-troisième Leçon. Falloir (Suite).

A. r. Faut-il s'en aller?

2. Faut-il nous dépêcher? Or—Faut-il que nous nous dépêchions?

3. Faudrait-il que je me

tienne prêt?

4. J'ai égaré mon dictionnaire de poche, que faut-il faire?

5. Que faut-il avant tout

pour enseigner?

- 6. Faut-il que Charles et moi nous recommençions ce thème?
- 7. Faut-il que je m'en aille?
- 8. Pensez-vous qu'il faille croire tout ce qu'il dit?
- 9. Faut-il que cette femme sache la vérité?

Non, il faut rester.

Mais oui, puisqu'il vous faudrait être à votre destination à midi.

Je crois qu'oui; il va falloir dégaîner.

Il faut vous en passer.

Il faut la patience d'un

ange.

Cela va sans dire, puisque vous ne l'avez pas fait comme il faut.

Oui, allez-vous-en (va-t'en), et cela tout de suite.

Quant à moi, je sais ce qu'en vaut l'aune.

Faut-il que vous demandiez une telle question?

(b) Falloir, with a Verb-Complement in the Infinitive (see Lesson 12, II.), provided the logical Subject is a Personal Pronoun:—

Il me faut commencer à midi. \*

Il te faut revenir tout de suite.

Il lui faut rester jusqu'au soir.

Il lui fuut tricoter une paire de bas.

Il vous faut renoncer à ce projet.

Il leur faut corriger leurs thèmes.

I must begin at twelve o'clock.
Thou must return immediately.
He must stay until evening.
She must knit a pair of stockings.
You must renounce this project.
They must correct their exercises.

\* Or also without me, te, etc., when it is plain from the context who must, or when used in a general sense:—

Il faut payer.

Il faudra voir cela.

Il faut être patient dans l'adversité.

One must pay.

That remains yet to be seen.

One must be patient in adversity.

K.

Obs.—If the real Subject is a Noun, the Subjunctive with que transfipe used instead of the Infinitive, see (c).

(c) Falloir, with que and a Verb-Complement in the Subjunctive—the only correct construction if the real Subject is a Noun; optional if it is a Personal Pronoun :-

Il faut que je revienne demain.

Il faudra que je revienne.

Il faut (faudra) que tu ailles aux bains de mer.

Il faut (faudra) qu'il s'en aille. Il faut (faudra) que Berthe se hâte.

Il a fallu (faudra) que n. restions.

Il fallut que je revinsse sur mes pas.

Il aurait fallu que tu y allasses.

I must come back to-morrow. I shall have to come back. Thou must go to the seaside.

He must (will have to) go away. Bertha must (will have to) hasten. We have been (shall be) obliged to stay. I had to retrace my steps. It would have been necessary for thee to go there.

DRILL: (1) Put the sentences in (b) in the Past Indef. and Future Pres. (The Infinitive must be left unchanged); (2) Conjugate in all persons singular and plural the sentences 1, 4, and 7 of (b) in their respective tenses and moods; (3) Complement—Il faut que Louis... successively by the Pres. Subj. of all irregular Verbs which have occurred so far.

B. 1. One must not believe<sup>2</sup> everything<sup>1</sup>. 2. One must work in order to acquire knowledge (partitive plur.). 3. They will have to undertake this journey, whether they like or not. 4. You must not always talk, you must listen! 5. They would have been obliged to go away, if it had rained. 6. We must always speak the truth. 7. They must be very tired after this long journey. 8. Must not this man know the truth?—Of course. 9. One must strike the iron while it is hot. 10. Will it be necessary for us to wait in the waiting-room? 11. They have been obliged (compelled) to stay till midnight. 12. He is a gentleman; she is very ladylike.

CAUTION.—Bear in mind what has been said in the 39th Lesson.

# Quarante-quatrième Lecon. Apprenez les Verbes valoir, voir, **déchoir** (pp. 32-35).

A. 1. Combien vaut cette étoffe?

2. Quel est l'équivalent d'un mètre?

3. A combien reviendrait donc le yard de cette étoffe?

4. Combien vaut une livre sterling ?

Elle vaut quatre francs le mètre.

Un mètre équivaut à 39 pouces mesure anglaise.

A environ trois schellings.

Une livre sterling vaut vingt-cinq francs.

5. Pourquoi lui en voulez-Yous?

6. N'allez-vous pas faire valoir ce champ?

7. Ne vaut-il pas mieux se taire que de parler à tort et à travers?

8. Quand nous reverronsnous?

Avez-vous jamais rien vu de plus beau?

10. Pourvoirez-vous à ses besoins?

Il m'a desservi, mais je le lui revaudrai.

Non, le jeu ne vaudrait pas la chandelle.

Si, car la langue d'un muet vaut mieux que celle d'un

J'espère que nous nous reverrons bientôt.

Non, je ne me souviens pas d'avoir jamais rien vu de

J'y ai déjà pourvu.

It is better to act than to speak.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Il vaut mieux agir que de parler.\* Le jeu ne vaut pas la chandelle. Il ne vaut pas la peine qu'on lui réponde. Cela vaut bien la peine d'y penser. It is well worth considering.

Rien qui vaille. Aller voir quelqu'un. Ils ne se voient pas.

The game is not worth the candle. It is not worth while (the trouble) replying to him. Worth nothing. To go and see; to call upon someone.

They do not keep company. C'est ce qu'il faudra voir. That remains to be seen.
Vois-tu! Voyez-vous!—Voyons! Look you! Mind you!—Let us see!

\* Que, then, after "il vaut mieux" takes the Infinitive with de.

DRILL: Put the first idiom in all tenses of the Indicative (3rd pers. only). In comp. tenses mieux is placed between the Auxil. and Part. Past.

B. 1. It is better to wait a few minutes. 2. It would be better to go by the first train than to wait. 3. It would have been better to go back immediately. 4. Formerly (the) tea was worth more than now. 5. It will not be worth the trouble to come back. 6. Do you think this horse is worth fifty pounds?—I don't. 7. Probably we shall not see him again. 8. I should just (bien) like to see 9. Come, make haste. 10. Have you ever seen such a sight!—It is worth seeing (= this is a thing to see). 11. Those books are worth nothing. 12. It is not just that favour should prevail over merit. 13. We provided (Pret for (=to) his wants. 14. Is this bill of exchange mature? -No, it will be mature on the 30th inst.

# Quarante-cinquième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe s'asseoir (pp. 34, 35).

A. 1. Asseyez-vous auprès de moi, vous devez être fatigué!

2. Où donc vous êtes-vous

assises, mesdemoiselles?

 Vous avez tort, il ne faut pas vous asseoir sur le gazon par ce temps humide.

4. Il ne vous sied pas de contrarier vos parents!

5. Le verbe "s'asseoir" ne s'emploie-t-il jamais sans le pronom réfléchi?

6. Où voulez-vous que nous asseyions ce malade?

Je m'assiérai volontiers, j'ai couru à perte d'haleine.

Nous nous sommes assises sur le gazon.

Eh bien, nous nous assiérons sur ce banc, à l'ombre de ce grand chêne.

Il vous sied bien de vouloir réformer les autres!

Si; par exemple: "Asseyez cet enfant." "Les Romains assirent un camp."

Où vous voudrez; sur le canapé ou sur (dans) le fauteuil.

DRILL: Conjugate—(1) the 2nd sentence in A. in all persons sing, and pl. of Past Indef.; (2) the 1st sentence in all persons sing, and pl. of Pres. Indic. and Fut. Pres.

B. 1. They sat down by the road-side. 2. [On] the eve of a battle the Romans used to pitch a camp. 3. The king was seated on his throne. 4. The foundations of this edifice are laid on the rock. 5. Where have these children sat down?—They have not sat down yet; they will sit down upon the turf. 6. Sit down on this chair, my dear child, and keep quiet! 7. Let us sit down in the shade of this large elm. 8. Take a seat and make yourself at home.

# QUATRIÈME CONJUGAISON.

# Quarante-sixième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes en -indre (pp. 36, 37).

A. 1. Le feu est-il sorti?

2. Je veux dire: Is the fire out?

3. Ne craignez-vous pas d'être trop tard?

4. Craignez-vous qu'il ne vienne trop tard?

Sorti? que voulez-vous dire? Mais, le feu ne sort pas.

A la bonne heure! Dites: Le feu est-il éteint.

Allez toujours, je vous rejoindrai dans cinq minutes.

Oui, je crains qu'il ne vienne pas assez tôt.

5. Tu ne craignais pas qu'il vînt, n'est-ce pas?

6. De qui vous plaignez-

vous?

- 7. De quoi se plaint-il?
- 8. Que voulez-vous que je craigne?
- 9. Pourquoi Brutus feignitil d'être imbécile?
  - 10. Le feu est-il éteint?
- 11. Comment expliquezvous l'emploi de ne après les verbes et les conjonctions qui expriment la crainte?

Au contraire, je craignais qu'il ne vînt pas. Je *me plains* de mon bottier

qui fait toujours mes bottes trop justes.

Il se plaint de votre manque de procédés envers lui.

A coup sûr, vous n'avez rien à craindre, si votre conscience est tranquille.

Afin que la vengeance du

roi ne l'atteignît pas.

Oui, le feu étant éteint, je suis sorti.

C'est un latinisme facile à expliquer: Craindre une chose, c'est espérer qu'elle n'arrive pas.

#### Construction de craindre:-

(a) with que and the Subjunctive, if the Subject of the second Verb is not the same as the Subject of craindre (see Lesson 21, a):-Je crains qu'il ne vienne. I fear he is coming (he will come). Je crains qu'il ne vienne pas. I fear he is not coming. Je ne crains pas qu'il vienne. I do not fear he will come.

(b) with de and the Infinitive (without ne) if both Verbs have the same Subject (see Lesson 21, a):-I much fear to irritate him. Je crains fort de l'irriter.

DRILL: Put the sentences in (a) in all persons sing, and pl. of the Imperfect.

B. 1. We fear the fire is out. 2. Is Mr. James in?—I am afraid he is out. 3. He was afraid of coming. 4. Shall you join us? 5. We pity these poor orphans. 6. The masters complain of the boys who infringe the rules. 7. How do you render the English proverb, "A burnt child dreads the from the child dreads the fire"?—[A] scalded cat fears (the) cold 8. The day begins to break. 9. He pretends to 10. I suppose he is afraid of going to school. 11. That spendthrift will not be able to make both ends 12. By-the-bye, which is the easiest way of making 13. It ( = this) is to light the candle at both ends meet? both ends (= by the two ends).

Quarante-septième Lecon. Apprenez les Verbes en -uiro (pp. 36, 37).

A. 1. Que traduisez-vous

- 2. Je crains que vous ne traduisiez trop littéralement.
- 3. Est-ce qu'il s'est bien conduit?
- 4. Il se nuira dans l'esprit de ses supérieurs.
- 5. Ne se sert-on pas en français du verbe cuire dans la signification de "to bake," "to burn"?
- 6. Comment se construisent les verbes réfléchis?

Nous traduisons cette page

de Virgile en anglais. C'est qu'on nous a dit de

traduire ainsi. Il s'est conduit on ne pourrait plus mal.

Oui, il lui en cuira.

Oui, on dit, par exemple, "des pommes cuites," "cuire de la brique," "de la chaux."

Ils se construisent tous avec le verbe *être*.

All is not gold that glitters. To bake bread. To boil an egg.

How do you spell this word?

To introduce some one to...

He will rue it.

My eyes smart.

Expressions Idiomatiques. Tout ce qui reluit n'est pas or. Cuire du pain. Cuire un œuf. Il (impers.) lui en cuira. Les yeux me cuisent. Comment écrit-on ce mot? Présenter quelqu'un à...

DRILL: Conjugate-

(1) the answer to the 1st question in A. in all persons of Pres. and Pret.

Il craint que je ne me conduise mal, in all persons singular Il craignait que je ne me conduisse mal, and plural. (2) Il craint que je ne me conduise mal,

(3) Put Il m'en cuira and les yeux me cuisent, in all persons of their respective tenses.

B. 1. Is there a good translation of Plutarch in French? —Yes, Amyot (has) translated Plutarch in (= of) a superior<sup>2</sup> manner<sup>1</sup>. 2. Have you boiled the eggs, Ann?—No, sir. 3. Why not?—Because the water is not boiling yet. Do you like the meat overdone or underdone? 5. V 5. Who destroyed the fortress of Sebastopol?—The allied armies of the French, English, and Italians reduced it to (=en) dust. 6. I thought I was instructing you (Lesson 17, b, 3), but it is you who instruct me. 7. Who wrote "Paradise Lost"?—

"Paradise Lost" was written by Milton. 8. Are the pears well baked? 9. A star which was shining in the east led their way (march). 10. His faults do him more harm than all his enemies. 11. Have these boys behaved well? 12. No, they have behaved very disorderly; they shall rue it.

# Quarante-huitième Leçon. Apprenes—traire, vaincre, suivre (pp. 38, 39).

- A. r. Il vous faut mettre à profit la lecture de cet excellent auteur!
  - 2. Qui m'aime me suive!

3. Quelle différence y a-t-il entre conquérir, vaincre, et prendre?

4. Par conséquent il faut dire: "la conquête d'un pays;" la victoire sur l'ennemi, et la prise d'une ville!

5. Pourquoi refusez-vous la porte à tout le monde?

- 6. "Je ne suis pas ce que je suis; car si j'étais ce que je suis, je ne serais pas ce que je suis!"—Devinez et traduisez!
- 7. C'est un ânier, c'est à dire un homme qui conduit des ânes.

J'en extrais tous les passages qui me frappent le plus.

Allez toujours devant, je

vous suis.

On dit: "conquérir un pays;" "vaincre un ennemi;" et "prendre une ville."

Oui, monsieur, et il faut dire le conquérant de la Perse; le vainqueur des Perses (ou, Persans).

Afin qu'on ne puisse me distraire de mes études.

Fort bien! mais encore faudrait-il savoir qui a dit cela!

A la bonne heure! J'y suis!

- DRILL: Conjugate in all persons of the Present Indicative—(1) the answer to A. 1; (2) the Present and Preterite of Je ne suis pas ce que je suis, in the sense explained in A. 7.
- B. 1. Night follows day. 2. What am I to do?— Extract the square root of 144. 3. Who conquered the Romans at the lake Trasimenus?—I don't know. 4. Who conquered the Cape of Good Hope?—The English conquered it in 1795, and again in 1806. 5. The Italian robbers pursued the English travellers, but they did not overtake them. 6. Have you overcome all difficulties? 7. The Swiss cowherds used to milk their cows twice a day. 8. Let us conquer or die! 9. No, no, for "He that fights and runs away may turn to fight another day." 10-These heedless boys do not follow the thread of your ideas.

# Quarante-neuvième Leçon. Apprenes dire et rire (pp. 38, 39).

A. 1. Dites-moi, s'il vous plaît, à qui vous écrivez.

2. Pourquoi redites-vous toujours la même chose?

3. Que voulez-vous que nous disions?

4. Que veut dire l'expression, "tit for tat"?

5. Si vous écrivez à mademoiselle votre sœur, diteslui bien des choses de ma

part.
6. Lui avez-vous dit son

7. Ont-ils ri de ce bon

mot?

8. Pourriez-vous m'expliquer ce que veut dire, "rire du bout des dents"?

Je vous le dirai quand j'aurai fini ma lettre.

Afin que vous ne l'oubliiez

pas.

Nous voulons que vous disiez la vérité.

Elle veut dire, "A bon chat bon rat."

Je n'y manquerai pas.

Oui, j'espère qu'il se le tiendra pour dit.

Oui, ils ont ri aux larmes.

Rire sans en avoir envie; ou, rire à contre-cœur.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Que dit-on? On dit que...

Vouloir dire:—
Que voulez-vous dire?
Trouver à redire (à dire) à...
Avoir beau...:—
Vous avez beau dire.
Dis donc! Dites donc! (familiar).
...; cela va sans dire.
Il va sans dire que...
Pour ainsi dire.
Dire des injures (des sottises) à qqn.
Se le tenir pour dit.

Dites-lui bien des choses de ma part!

Il n'y a pas de quoi rire.

Eclater de rire; rire aux éclats.

What do they say? It is said that...
To mean; to signify:—

What do you mean?
To find fault with...

To be in vain; to be all very well:—
It is in vain for you to talk,

I say!

...; that is a matter of course. It is a matter of course that...

So to say; as it were.

To insult some one.

To take the hint (not to require telling twice).

Remember me to him.

It is no matter for laughing.

To burst out laughing.

Rire dans sa barbe (sous cape). Rira bien qui rira le dernier. Se rire de quelqu'un. Je le dis pour rire.

To laugh in one's sleeve, Let him laugh who wins. To make fun (merry) of some one. I say it for fun.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons-

- (1) the Pres. and Impf. Ind. of—I say what (=ce que) I know.
- (2) I must say what I know.
- (3) I make light of his threats (to make light of=Se rire de).

B. 1. What do you say?—I say that it (=cela) is a matter of course. 2. Do not always repeat the same thing. 3. You must not repeat it. 4. Do not contradict your parents. 5. I say, Harry, don't speak ill of him. 6. It is said that he has written a poem. 7. She does not know what to (=que) say. 8. What do you mean? 9. What does this proverb mean? 10. It is in vain for him to say that he is ill, I don't believe it. 11. Remember me to them. 12. What would (= will) he have me say? 13. Have you said it for fun?—Of course! 14. They burst out laughing.

# Cinquantième Leçon. Apprenes le Verbe faire (pp. 38, 39).

A. 1. Pourquoi ne faitesvous pas attention?

2. Ne vaut-il pas mieux

faire envie que pitié?

3. Ferez-vous un tour de jardin avec nous?

4. Fallait-il que je le fisse ou non?

5. Voulez-vous que je leur fasse une visite?

6. Ne faites pas tant de façons, je vous en prie.

7. Pourquoi le chat fit-il le mort?

Faites-moi le plaisir de faire attention vous-même. Cela va sans dire.

Je me ferai un grand plaisir de vous accompagner.

Non, il ne fallait pas le faire.

Oui, cela leur fera plaisir.

Te fais à ma guise, ne vous déplaise.

Pour faire main basse sur les souris.

(a) Faire used with a Noun-Object :-

Les abeilles s'occupent à faire du The bees are busy making honey. Il faut faire son devoir. [miel. Je vais faire une promenade, .

One must do one's duty. I am about to go for a walk.

garden?

Allez-vous faire un tour de jardin?

Ils vont faire des démarches. Cela doit lui faire plaisir. Cela a dû lui faire de la peine.

Veux-tu faire une partie de whist? Il vous faut faire attention. Elle compte vous faire une visite. Il ne vous faut pas faire le malade. Il vaut mieux faire envie que pitié! Pourquoi faire des façons? Faire main basse sur... Faire une question. Faire voile pour... Se faire soldat (matelot, etc.)

They are going to take steps.
That must give him pleasure.
That must have given him pain (grieved him).
Will you have a game at whist?
You must pay attention.
She intends to pay you a visit.
You must not sham (feign) illness.

Are you going to walk round the

It is better to excite envy than pity.
Why stand on ceremonies?
To say one's prayers.
To lay violent hands on.
To ask a question.

To ask a question.

To set sail for...

To become a soldier (sailor, etc.)

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je fais mon devoir; (2) Il faut que je fasse une visite; (3) Je le ferais, si j'avais le temps; (4) Je fis bien attention.

B. 1. Let us take a walk in the garden. 2. Do you know who made this discovery?—I don't. 3. To-morrow we shall set sail for America. 4. Would you not do better to stay at home? 5. Now pay attention, I am going to show you how you must do this. 6. Have you paid him a visit?—No, but if you wish me to pay him a visit, I will call on him this afternoon. 7. I assure you that he will be much pleased (=that [cela] will give him much pleasure). 8. Is it true that your brother has become [a] sailor?—Yes, it grieves me much. 9. That news must have given you 10. He plays the truant. 11. When shall much pain. you take any steps on his behalf? 12. Five times fifteen are seventy-five. 13. What are you doing, John?—Nothing. 14. And what are you doing, James?—Helping (= I help) John.

# Cinquante-et-unième Leçon. Faire (Suite).

- A. 1. Avez-vous fait venir le tailleur?
  - 2. Faut-il le faire entrer?
- 3. Faites-vous grand cas de son amitié?
- 4. Vous a-t-on fait bon accueil?
  - 5. Lui a-t-on fait tort?
- 6. Leur avez-vous fait part de la bonne nouvelle?
- 7. Vous êtes-vous fait mal en tombant?

Oui, le voici qui vient.

Oui, faites-le monter dans mon appartement.

Cela va sans dire.

Oui, on nous a fait voir toutes les curiosités.

Non, au contraire, on a fait des démarches en sa faveur. Non, mais nous la leur

ferons tenir cet après-midi.

Oui, je me suis donné une entorse.

faire part à...de... to acquaint ... with

(b) Faire, with a Noun or Verb, used to form Verbal Phrases:—

faire bon accueil (à) to welcome.
faire cas de,
faire feu sur...
faire mal (à),
faire peur (à),
faire plaisir (à),
to frighten.
faire plaisir (à),
to gladden.

faire plaisir (à), to gladden.

faire aller, to set in motion.
faire bouillir, to boil (trans.)
faire dire, to send word.
faire entrer, to show in.
faire mouter, to show upstairs.
faire moutir, to put to death.
faire naître, to give rise to.

faire semblant de  $\begin{cases} to feign, \\ to do as if. \end{cases}$ faire signe (à), to beckon. faire tort (à), to wrong. faire sa toilette, to dress. faire paraître, to evince. to transmit. faire tenir, to make the most of. faire valoir, faire venir, to send for. to show. faire voir, faire savoir, to let know. faire faire (see Lesson 54).

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je ferai venir mon médecin;
(2) Il faudrait que je fisse voir mon passeport;
(3) Il fallut que je le fisse entrer.

B. 1. You hurt me. 2. Show them upstairs. 3. Have you sent for the dentist? 4. We have acquainted him with the circumstances. 5. Let me know when you are ready. 6. Show me your pictures. 7. What are they doing? 8. These men do me wrong. 9. The English soldiers fired at the enemies. 10. Let us go for a walk-

# Cinquante-deuxième Leçon. Faire (Suite).

A. 1. Où faites-vous faire vos habits?

2. Je voudrais me faire faire une paire de bottes.

3. Chez quel relieur avezvous fait relier ces volumes in-quarto?

4. Pourquoi avez-vous fait venir le tailleur?

5. Où vous êtes-vous fait couper les cheveux?

Je les fais faire à Paris.

Eh bien! faites venir le maître bottier.

Je les ai fait relier chez Rivière.

Pour me faire prendre la mesure.

Chez le coiffeur au coin de la rue.

(c) Faire, to order, to cause, to have, to get, etc., with an Infinitive-Complement.

(1) corresponding to English Active Infinitive:-

Je le fais travailler. Vous me faites rire. Il le fit sortir. I make him work.
You make me laugh.
He ordered (caused) him to go out.

(2) corresponding to the English Passive Infinitive :-

Je fais raccommoder mes souliers. Il a fait relier ses livres. Ils ont fait repasser leur linge.

Se faire payer (punir, etc.)
Se faire comprendre.
Il s'est laissé tromper.

I get (have) my shoes mended. He has had his books bound. They have had their linen ironed.

To get one's self paid (punished).
To make one's self understood.
He has allowed himself to be deceived.

CAUTION.—In French the Infinitive after faire, laisser, is never used in the Passive as in English. Compare the Examples above.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je me fais faire un habit; (2) Je me suis fait punir; (3) Il importe que je me fasse inscrire.

B. I. I shall make you do it. 2. I shall get my watch mended. 3. Who has ordered you to come here?—It is the master who has ordered me to come here. 4. Can you make yourself understood in Paris?—Yes, I thoroughly mastered Macmillan's French Course. 5. And can you manage to express yourself correctly?—Yes, I always use the active Infinitive after faire. 6. Where do you get your linen washed? 7. I get it washed at home. 8. Get these letters posted. 9. I have had my hair cut.

# Cinquante-troisième Leçon. Faire (Suite et fin).

A. r. Vous ne faites que vous amuser!

2. Comment se fait-il que vous soyez si triste?

3. Cela fait-il votre affaire?

4. S'est-il fait à ce genre de vie?

5. Fait-il cher vivre à Londres?

6. Ne ferait-il pas mieux de se taire?

Eh bien! qu'est-ce que cela vous fait?

J'ai fait de grandes pertes à la Bourse.

Oui, cela m'arrange.

Je crois qu'il finira par s'y faire.

Pas plus cher qu'à Paris.

Qu'il en fasse à sa guise!

# (d) Faire: Expressions Idiomatiques.

{ Ne faire que chanter. Ne faire que de sortir. Comment se fait-il que... Se faire à une chose. N'avoir que faire d'une chose. Faire l'affaire; as,

Cela ne fait pas mon affaire.
Vous feriex mieux de rester ici.
Faire bien ses affaires.
En faire à sa tête.
Cela ne fait rien.
Qu'est-ce que cela me [Dat.] fait?
Il fait\* cher vivre ici.

To do nothing but sing.
To have but just gone out.
How is it that...?
To get accustomed to a thing.
To have no occasion for a thing.
To suit; to meet the want.
That won't do for me.
You had better stay here.
To get on well.
To have one's way.
That does not matter.
What is that to me?
It is expensive to live here.

\* For il fait, used in matters concerning temperature, see Impersonal Verbs.

DRILL: Conjugate in all tenses-

- (1) Je ne fais que m'amuser. (2) Je ne faisais que de m'embarquer.
- (3) Croyez-vous que je m'y fasse?

B. I. I shall never get accustomed to that style of living.

2. We have no occasion for your old books. 3. How is it that you get up so late? 4. What is that to him? 5. I have but just heard that he has become a sailor. 6. That won't do for them. 7. He could not make himself understood. 8. Let me know what they are doing. 9. They had better not go there. 10. Why have you suffered yourself to be cheated? 11. You must have your linen ironed.

12. will send for the laundress this evening.

### Cinquante quatrième Leçon. Apprenez le Verbe mettre (pp. 38, 39).

- A. 1. Lui avez-vous remis ma lettre?
- 2. Il vous faut mettre à profit la lecture de cet excellent auteur.
- 3. Quand vous mettrezvous enfin à faire vos devoirs, fainéant que vous êtes?
- 4. Mets ton chapeau et suis-moi!
- 5. Monsieur, le dîner est servi!
- Qu'est-ce qu'il s'est mis en tête?
- 7. Combien de temps avezvous mis à venir ici?

Je lui ai remis votre lettre ce matin à huit heures.

J'en extrais tous les passages qui me frappent le plus.

Ne vous mettez pas en colère, je m'y mettrai dès que j'aurai donné à manger à mes lapins.

Je te suivrai, si bon me semble.

Eh bien, mettons-nous à table.

Il s'est mis en tête de me suivre.

J'ai mis un jour entier à venir ici.

mettre par écrit, to write down.

· To begin to, to set to ...

To take it into one's head.

To lower one's tone.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

To dress.

To set about it.

To get angry.

To go to bed. To sit down to table.

mettre à profit, to turn to account. mettre le feu à, to set fire to [spirits mettre à la voile, to set sail. mettre en train, to set on, to put in mettre au jour, to bring forth.

Se mettre. Se mettre à...

S'y mettre.

Se mettre en colère (=se fâcher). Se mettre au lit (=se coucher).

Se mettre à table.

Se mettre en tête.

Mettre de l'eau dans son vin [fig.]

Mettre du temps à faire quelque To be a long time doing a thing. chose.

Le temps se met au beau (à la The weather is becoming fair pluie). (rainy).

DRILL: Put in all persons—(1) Je me mets à mon ouvrage; (2) Je me mis en tête; (3) Avant que je me mette en train.

B. 1. Now let us begin to work. 2. He got angry. 3. I wish you to turn your time to account. 4. Have you put on your new coat?—Yes, I put it on last Sunday.

5. They have promised to write it down. 6. The enemies set fire to the cottages. 7. Our opponents lowered their 8. You ought to have had your boots cleaned. 9. She dresses very well. 10. They set sail for Egypt.

# Cinquante-cinquième Leçon. Apprenes les Verbes prendre et battre (pp. 38, 39).

- A. 1. Apprenez-vous à dessiner?
- 2. Vous a-t-on pris votre montre?
- 3. Cet homme voudrait m'emprunter mille francs; qu'en dites-vous?
- 4. Prendrez-vous fait et cause pour nous?
- 5. Quand passerez vous chez lui?
- 6. Se peut-il que vous preniez plaisir à tourmenter ce pauvre petit chien?
- 7. Allez à la fourmi, paresseux que vous êtes!

Oui, il y a dix-huit mois que je prends des leçons de dessin.

Non, mais on m'a pris mon porte-monnaie.

Prenez garde de vous y fier; un beau matin il prendra la clef des champs.

Mal nous en prendrait de prendre votre parti, quand vous avez tort.

J'irai le prendre à midi et demi.

Apprenez à vous mêler de vos affaires, s'il vous plaît!

Moi?—Oui, vous! Considérez sa conduite, et apprenez à devenir sage!

# Expressions Idiomatiques.

Prendre la parole.
Prendre son parti (de).
Prendre garde de.
Prenez garde de tomber.
Prendre l'occasion aux cheveux.
S'y prendre:—
il s'y prend mal.
S'en prendre à...:—
Je m'en prendrai à vous.
Bien (mal) lui (en) prendra de...
Il lui en prendra mal de...

To begin to speak.
To make up one's mind.
To take care (to mind) not to; as, mind you don't fall.
To take time by the forelock.
To set about it:—
He sets about it in the wrong way.
To lay the blame on...:—
I shall make you responsible for it.
It will...lucky (unlucky) for him.
Ill will betide him to...

CAUTION.—Verbs which express taking, borrowing, asking from, etc., govern the same case as Verbs of giving, vis., the name of the thing given or taken is the Direct Object, and the name of the Person to whom it is given or from whom it is taken in the Indirect Object: as,

On *lui* prit (vola) son argent.
On *leur* ôta la vie.
On *lui* a demandé une question.
Il emprunta cent francs à son ami.

Mon chien m'échappa.

They took his money from him.
Their life was taken from them.
They asked him a question.
He borrowed a hundred francs of his friend.
My dog escaped from me.

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je m'en prends à elle; (2) Je pris mon parti; (3) Je me suis pris à rire; (4) Croit-elle que je prenne garde?

B. 1. Do they learn German?—They have already learned it. 2. He wanted to borrow my knife, but I took good care not to lend it to him. 3. They will lay the blame on us. 4. Do you understand what (= æ que) he means? 5. When did the English take the fortress of Badajoz?—I don't remember exactly what year. 6. You will have to take the steamboat at Calais. 7. Mind you don't offend him. 8. He does not set about it properly. 9. Have they made up their mind to learn the poem by heart? 10. The enemy surprised us in the midst of the night. 11. These boys do nothing but fight. 12. Have our soldiers fought well?—Yes, they fought like lions. 13. (The) verses are more easily learned (= reflex. verb) than (the) prose.

# Cinquante-sixième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes en -aître, -oître (pp. 40, 41).

A. I. Connais-tu ce monsieur?

2. Votre ami connaît-il beaucoup de monde ici?

3. Ne me reconnaissezvous pas?

4. Quand est-ce que les jours commencent à croître?

Savez-vous si ce maquignon se connaît en chevaux?

Je le *connais* de vue, mais je ne sais pas son nom.

Je ne saurais vous le dire.

Mais oui, il me semble vous avoir connu.

Ils croissent au printemps et décroissent en automne.

Je ne le sais que trop bien.

6. La maxime "Connaistoi toi-même" n'est-elle pas naissent savent ce qui leur une des plus belles de la philosophie ancienne?

7. Connais-tu cette sonate

de Mozart?

8. Comment Robinson Crusoë connut-il que son île était habitée?

Oui, car ceux qui se conest utile.

Oui, je la connais, mais je ne sais pas la jouer.

voyant des d'hommes sur le sable du rivage.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Se connaître en... (s'y connaître). Faire connaître. Connaître à fond. A ce qu'il me paraît. Connu! Mauvaise herbe croft toujours.

To be a good judge of. To make known, to introduce. To know thoroughly, From what I can see. That is an old dodge! Ill weeds grow apace,

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je me connais en chevaux; (2) Je suis né en France; (3) Je connus mon ami à sa démarche.

B. 1. Do you know Gray's Elegy?—I know it well. 2. Do you know it by heart?—Not quite, although I have read it several times. 3. Do you know this naughty boy? -We only know him by name. 4. Do you know whether his father is at home?—He is not at home. 5. He is born [a] Frenchman. 6. Did you recognise him?—I should recognise him out of a (= among) thousand. 7. The Danube takes its rise in the Black Forest and empties itself into the Black Sea. 8. In autumn the days decrease in proportion as the nights increase. 9. When was he born?—He was born (Preterite active) on the 27th of October, 1831. 10. Your brother seems [to be] in very good humour.— Yes, he has a son (a son is born to him). 11. The cows are grazing in the meadows. 12. Can you box?—No, in France we hardly know that fine sport.

# Cinquante-septième Lecon. Apprenez le Verbe croire (pp. 40, 41).

- A. 1. Croyez vous cette vieille dame?
- 2. Vous en a-t-elle fait
- 3. Croyez vous pouvoir venir aujourd'hui?
- 4. Lui croyez vous des talents?
- 5. Qui aurait jamais cru cela?
- 6. Pourquoi confondezvous toujours crû avec cru?

Autrefois je croyais tout ce qu'elle racontait.

Oui, elle voudrait me faire croire aux revenants.

Non, je crois devoir vous avertir de ne pas m'attendre. Oui, je crois qu'il en a.

Pas moi; les bras m'en tombent!

Parce qu'il n'y a que la différence d'un accent circonflexe.

### Emplois du Verbe croire :-

Croire quelque chose (quelqu'un). Croire à quelque chose.

Croire à quelqu'un.

{ Je crois que oui (si).
 } Je crois que non.

To believe something (some one).
To believe (to put one's trust) in something. [of some one. To believe in the existence (skill, etc.) I think so.
I do not think so (I think not).

#### Croire suivi de l'Infinitif.

Je crois devoir vous informer.

I think I ought (I think it my duty)

Je croyais vous avoir averti.

to inform you.

I thought I had warned you.

#### Constructions Elliptiques.

Je le crois honnête homme.

[I believe him to be an honest man.]

[I believe him to have and honest man.]

[I believe him to have and honest man.]

[I give him credit for and honest man.]

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je crois l'avoir vu; (2) Je le crus sur parole; (3) Faut-il que je le croie?

B. 1. Do you, then, believe this story?—As for me, I don't believe it. 2. I have believed him once, but I shall not believe him again. 3. Did you ever believe in ghosts?—When I was a child, our nurse used to tell us ghost stories. 4. But do not fancy that I believed in ghosts. 5. He thought he could sing. 6. We thought we were doing well. 7. Do you think he will come?—We think (it) not. 8. I thought I had told you so. 9. We believe them to be capable of anything. 10. They believe us to have great wealth (plur.).

Cinquante-huitième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes plaire, taire, lire, boire, conclure (pp. 40, 41).

A. 1. Vous plairait-il de m'accompagner?

2. Mue votre cousine se plaît-elle à Naples?

3. Pourquoi donc ne buvez-vous pas?

4. Vous êtes toujours à lire; que lisez-vous là?

5. Pourquoi ne s'est-il pas

6. Taisez-vous donc, je ne sais pas ce que je lis.

Je le veux bien.

Non, elle ne s'y plaît pas, il y fait trop chaud.

Parce que nous avons déjà trop bu.

Nous relisons Robinson Crusoë.

Parce qu'il n'avait pas envie de se taire.

Taisez-vous le premier, si vous voulez qu'on se taise.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Cela lui plaît à dire.
A Dieu ne plaise! Plût à Dieu!
Vous plaisez vous dans ce pays?
Oui, je m'y plais beaucoup.
Faites ce qui (bon) vous plaira.
Plait-il?
Taisez vous, s'il vous plaît!
Comme bon vous semblera.
Je suis content (bien aise) que...

He is pleased to say so.
God forbid! Would to God!
Do you like this country?
I like it very much.
Do what you like.
What did you say? what is it, please?
Do be silent, if you please.
As you please.
I am pleased\* that...

\*CAUTION.—As a rule only transitive Verbs which take a *Direct*Object (*Accusative* Case) can be used in the *Passive* voice in French;

\*Plaire takes à (i.e. it takes an Indir. Obj. [Dat.]), and hence we cannot say, as in English—

I am pleased; nor, He is believed to be ... say—On croit qu'il est; or, On le croit... (see Lesson 25).

DRILL: Conjugate in all persons—(1) Je me plais ici; (2) Je me suis plu à la campagne; (3) Je me tais; (4) Je ne me suis pas tû; (5) Je lis (lus) pour m'amuser; (6) Je bois pour me rafraîchir.

B. I. These books do not please me. 2. How do you like the country?—I like it very well. 3. We should be pleased to see you. 4. What do you infer from his speech?

5. What is he reading?—He is reading the works of Shakspeare. 6. When shall you read these French newspapers?

—I should have read them already, if you had been silent.

7. What do they (=on) drink in Germany?—They drink beer and wine (there). 8. As for us, we drink water.

9. Be silent! 10. I won't be silent; I will do as I please.

11. A young man like you ought to be silent.

Cinquante-neuvième Leçon. Apprence le Verbe vivre, et ceux en -oudre (pp. 42, 43).

A. 1. Pour qui cousezvous ces chemises?

2. Combien en avez-vous déjà cousues?

3. Qu'allez-vous résoudre, messieurs?

4. Le prévenu a-t-il été

5. Peut-on dissoudre le sel dans l'eau?

6. A-t-il de quoi vivre?

7. Ne faut-il pas bien vivre pour bien mourir?

8. Pourquoi fait-il la mine?

Nous les cousons pour les pauvres.

Vingt - quatre; hier nous en cousimes douze.

Nous nous résoudrions, si nous le pouvions.

Non, mais sa complice a été absoute à l'unanimité.

Oui, l'eau est le dissolvant des sels.

Oui, il vit de ses rentes.

Oui, car on meurt d'ordinaire comme on a vécu.

Parce qu'on lui a coupé les vivres.

#### Expressions Idiomatiques.

Ne savoir que résoudre. Vivre au jour la journée. Qui vive? Vive le roi! Etre sur le qui-vive. Savoir vivre, or Avoir du savoir-vivre On ne sait qui meurt, ni qui vit. Not to be able to make up one's mind. To live from hand to mouth.
Who goes there? Long live the king!
To be on the alert.
To be well bred.
Life is uncertain.

Examples illustrating the difference between vivre and demeurer:— Vivre quatre-vingts ans. Il vécut heureux. Il vit bien. Ces oiseaux vivent de grains, etc. Les poissons vivent dans l'eau. Demeurer, or, Vivre à la campagne, à la ville, à la cour. Où demeuresvous?—Je aemeure dans telle rue. Il a demeuré trois ans à Madrid.

B. 1. He cannot make up his mind. 2. They lived from hand to mouth. 3. Is it expensive to live in Paris? 4. I have made up my mind to go [and] live in France. 5. How do you grind your coffee?—We grind it in a coffee-6. Does sugar dissolve itself in water?—Yes, else we could not sweeten our tea and (our) coffee. 7. I don't think the criminals have been acquitted. 8. Did he live happy? 9. Long live the Queen! 10. In what century did Columbus live?—In the fifteenth century; he discovered America in 1492. 11. What difference is there between vivre and demeurer?—Vivre means to live in the sense of to exist, to subsist, to be alive, to spend one's life; whilst demeurer means to live in the sense of to dwell, to inhabit, to reside, etc. Soixantième Leçon. Apprenez les Verbes Défectifs (pp. 42, 43).

B. r. Do you like (the) fried fish?—Yes, I do. 2. Then I shall order the cook to fry these haddocks. 3. The water is gushing from the rock. 4. This door does not close well. 5. These beautiful roses and tulips will soon blossom. 6. The waves of the sea were roaring. 7. What [a] noisy demonstration! 8. It begins to dawn. 9. We found him lying in the straw.

Soixante-et-unième Leçon. Shall, will; should, would. CAUTION.—Bear in mind—

- (1) the peculiarities of English Conjugation; as, I shall go, thou wilt go, etc.

  I should go, thou wouldst go, etc.

  J'irais, tu irais, etc.

  J'irais, tu irais, etc.
- (2) the difference between the Simple Future and the Imperative:

  I shall go.

  J'irai.

  Tu ne déroberas point.
  - (3) the difference between-
- (a) a mere Wish or Willingness and Determination:—

  I shall go. I will (want to) go.

  I should like to go there.

  Je voudrais bien y aller.
- (b) should, would, in a Principal Clause, expressing Contingency, and should in a Dependent Clause, as the sign of the Subjunctive: as, Conditional.

We should go, if we had time. Nous irions, si n. avions le temps. You would go, if you had time. Vous iries, si v. aviez le temps.

Subjunctive.

It is necessary { we should go there. Il faut { nous y allions. that { you should go there. que { vous y allicz. }

(c) should, as used in (b), and should in the sense of ought to: as,
You should go (ought to go) at once. Vous devriez y aller tout de suite.
You should have gone (ought to have Vous auriez dû y aller de ce pas. gone) at once.

Obs. - Will you have wine or beer? Voulez-vous du vin, ou de la bière?

B. r. I shall see him to-morrow. 2. I want to see that.

3. We should like to see that. 4. I should see it, if it were not so dark. 5. You should see it now. 6. It is strange that you should not see it. 7. I am to see him to-morrow.

8. Will you have apples or pears?—I will have apples, it you please. 9. You would see better, if you used speciacles.

10. You will soon see what he wants.

# Soixante-deuxième Leçon. Récapitulation des Verbes Irréguliers.

- I. 1. Go away! 2. I shall not go away. 3. We should send you a letter, if it were necessary. 4. Brutus! art thou asleep? 5. Do not bring the water before it boils. 6. My nieces have gone out. 7. They have repented of it. 8. They ran home. 9. Is the duchess dead?—No, but she is dying. 10. Have your aunts come at last?—They will come to-morrow. 11. Their ill-gotten property will soon be squandered. 12. We shall gather the cherries this evening. 13. You must keep what you have promised. 14. That smells very nice (good). 15. Help yourself to some cherries. 16. Help yourself, and Heaven will help you. 17. The Egyptian soldiers ran away. 18. By whom was America discovered? 19. By whom was Mexico conquered? 20. And by whom were the Carthaginians conquered? 21. Why are all the windows open? 22. I open them every morning.
- II. I. We are to stay at home. 2. Ought he to have done it? 3. How much do you owe him?—I owe nothing. 4. You must be tired! 5. You must have been very angry! 6. Can it be that he does not know the good news? 7. Knowing myself, I know that I am not perfect. 8. Know ye that I will not consent to it. 9. Can you tell me what I am to do? 10. What do you want?—I want some potatoes. 11. The pupils must pay attention. 12. It would be better to be silent. 13. I don't want you to come. 14. Sit down! 15. He had just sat down to dinner, when the thunderstorm broke out. 16. I shall never see them again.
- III. 1. Did they not behave very badly? 2. The Romans destroyed Carthage. 3. Show me the letters that you have written. 4. I wrote yesterday to my partner. 5. What do you want me to write? 6. Do you like the meat overdone or underdone? 7. What do you say?—I say what I know. 8. They are believed to be very extravagant. 9. It is in vain for you to repeat that. 10. We have but just returned from the country. 11. They set great

value on your friendship. 12. Is your sister dressing? 13. To-morrow it will be very fine. 14. Is it daylight?—No, it is still dark. 15. I have had a new coat made. 16. He will get himself punished. 17. How do you like the sea-side? 18. We did not believe that he was ill. 19. I fear it is too late. 20. What do you complain of? 21. He was (is) born on the 31st of December. 22. What are you doing?—We are doing our duty. 23. They learn nothing. 24. The measures you have taken are useless. 25. The old man has lived a hundred years.

# Soixante-troisième Leçon. Sommaire des Irrégularités de la Conjugaison Française.

#### DRILL: Give-

- (I) the *Present Participle* of—partir, répartir, servir, asservir, vêtir, fuir, ouvrir, gésir, fleurir, concevoir, devoir, savoir, échoir, voir, s'asseoir, seoir; craindre, instruire, luire, écrire, traire, vaincre, suffire, dire, maudire, faire, prendre, paraître, paître, croître, naître, croire; plaire, taire, lire, boire, absoudre, résoudre, moudre, coudre.
- (2) the Present Indicative (and of those marked \* the Present Subjunctive) of—s'en aller\*, s'endormir, se repentir, bouillir, faillir, cueillir, tressaillir, couvrir, souffrir, acquérir\*, tenir\*, mourir\*, courir, apercevoir, devoir\*, savoir\*, mouvoir, pouvoir\*, vouloir\*, valoir\*, falloir\*, s'asseoir\*, peindre\*, traduire, luire, écrire\*, extraire, suivre, vivre, rire\*, dire, faire\*, mettre, prendre\*, connaître, naître\*, boire\*, résoudre\*; appeler, céder, appuyer, acheter, se promener, partager, percer, haïr.
- (3) the *Preterite*, 1st person plural, and the *Participle Perfect* of—acquérir, venir, mourir, courir; devoir, savoir, mouvoir, pleuvoir, pouvoir, voir, s'asseoir; se plaindre, déduire, nuire, cuire, écrire, rire, dire, faire, mettre, prendre, connaître, croître, croîre, naître, se plaire, se taire, lire, boire, résoudre, coudre, vivre.
- (4) The Future of—aller, envoyer; cueillir, acquérir, tenir, mourir, courir; avoir, devoir, savoir, mouvoir, pleuvoir, pouvoir, vouloir, valoir, falloir, déchoir, voir, s'asseoir, seoir; faire, être.
- (5) the Present Perfect (Past Indefinite) of—s'en aller; partir, sortir, se repentir, venir, mourir, s'asseoir; se taire, naître.

#### VIII.-LE SUBSTANTIF.

# Soixante-quatrième Leçon. I.—Le Substantif déterminé par l'Article défini (p. 44).

- A. r. Quels sont les principaux métaux?
  - 2. Le latin est-il difficile?
- 3. Quel est le symbole de la sagesse?
- 4. Que préférez-vous, le café ou le thé?
- 5. L'Italie n'est-elle pas un beau pays?
- 6. Le Général Wolseley a-t-il vaincu le pacha Arabi?

L'or, l'argent, le mercure, le cuivre, le fer, le plomb, l'étain et le zinc.

Oui, mais il n'est pas si difficile que le grec.

C'est le sel.

Ni l'un ni l'autre, je présère le chocolat.

Sans doute, néanmoins je voudrais plutôt rester en Angleterre.

Oui, il l'a battu à plate couture

- The Definite Article is used in French—contrary to English usage—
  (a) before Abstract and Collective Nouns, used in a general sense; as,
  L'oisiveté est la mère du vice.

  Le fer est plus dur que l'argent.

  Idleness is the mother of vice.

  Iron is harder than silver.
- (b) before Names of Continents, Countries, Provinces, Mountains; as, Les grande puissances de l'Europe sont la Grande Bretagne, la France, l'Allemagne, l'Autriche et la Russie. Le Vésuve n'est pas si haut que l'Etna.
- (c) before Names of Titles, Dignities, Professions, etc.; as,
  Le roi Charles; le général Chanzy; le docteur Graves.
  Monsieur (M. or Mr.) le directeur.
  Messieurs (MMe. or Mrs.) les directeurs.
  Madame (Mme.) la directrice.
  Mesdames (Mmes.) les directrices.
  Mademoiselle (Mlle.) votre sœur.
  Mesdemoiselles (Mlles.) vos sœurs.

  The ladies principal.
  Your sister.
  Your sisters.
- \* Obs. 1. The Article is, however, not used (a) after en or de following a Verb which expresses residing at, going to, coming from, etc.; as, Il est en Angleterre. J'irai en France. Il vient de Belgique. [but—Il est (ira) au Canada; because Masculine Names of Countries nearly always take the Definite Article.]
- (b) if the Name of a Country, etc., is used Adjectively; as,

  Des vins de France.

  French wines.

  Spanish wool.

Obs. 2:-

Dix francs la livre (weight, measure). Ten francs a pound, Twice a day, Deux fois par jour (time).

Obs. 3. The French Adjective used predicatively (instead of attributively) :-Il a les yeux bleus, les cheveux blonds. He has blue eyes, fair hair.

B. r. Man is mortal. 2. Men are mortal. 3. Beer is cheaper than wine. 4. What mountains divide France from Spain?—The Pyrenees. 5. Is it expensive to live in England?—Yes, it is dearer than in Germany. 6. Has Dr. Reymond come back from Italy?—Yes, and in a week he will set out again for France. 7. Is not tea dearer than coffee?—Yes, it is sold from three to five shillings a pound. 8. Has Captain Rouget travelled in Japan and in China?— Yes, he has also visited the Brazils and Mexico. 9. Tea is ready.

#### Soixante-cinquième Leçon. Pluriel des Substantifs et des **Adjectifs** (pp. 47, 48).

lu les A. 1. Avez-vous détails de cette malheureuse expédition?

2. N'admirez-vous pas ces beaux tableaux du Corrége?

3. Vos aieuls ne sont-ils pas originaires de la Grèce?

4. Avez-vous mal aux veux?

5. Votre frère cadet n'a-t-il pas une collection de timbres-poste?

6. Où trouve-t-on ces minéraux précieux?

Oui, je les ai lus dans les journaux du soir.

Oui, ce sont de vrais chefsd'œuvre.

Si; ils comptent des héros parmi leurs aïeux.

Non, mais j'ai froid aux mains.

Oui, il en a de tous les pays: des Pays-Bas, des Etats-Unis, du Mexique et même de la Nouvelle Zélande.

On les tire des entrailles de la terre.

DRILL: Give the Plural of—(1) mon cher ami; leur beau cristal; votre ancien château; le moindre détail; ce jeune Anglais; son œil bleu; le corail rouge; du fromage de Hollande; de l'eau douce; son bijou précieux; le travail assidu.

(2) un\* nouveau timbre-poste; le bel arc-en-ciel; votre beau-frère; ant vrai chef-d'œuvre; le gentilhomme anglais; son bijou; le vice-roi de l'Inde; l'avant-ooureur de la saison; le chef-lieu du camion; ver-à-soie infatigable; ton vieux porte-manteau. \* the plural of un to be rendered by the Partitive Article.

B. I. Silkworms are very interesting insects. 2. Pumice stones are very porous. 3. The omnibuses start every quarter of an hour. 4. What ails your little friend?—He has a pain in his knees. 5. The cattle are grazing in the green pastures of the Alps. 6. In what countries are humming birds found?—I think most of them are to be found (= find themselves) in South America. 7. And where do corals come from?—They come from the bottom of the sea. 8. The Bourbons were as unfortunate as the Stuarts. 9. The servant has broken three tea-cups and two wineglasses. 10. I had (took) two cups of tea. 11. Pebbles are more useful than jewels. 12. Postscripts very often contain the gist of letters.

# Soixante-sixième Leçon. II.—Le Substantif déterminé par · l'Article partitif, ou par un Adverbe de quantité (voir § 12, II.).

A. 1. Avez-vous bu du vin?

2. Ce marchand vend-il des crevettes?

3. Comment se fait-il que vous n'ayez point d'amis?

4. Avez-vous eu des nouvelles d'Egypte?

5. Apportez-moi, s'il vous plaît, *du* vin blanc, *du* pain bis et *du* fromage.

Non, j'ai bu *de la* bière. Oui, il vend *d'*excellentes crevettes.

Parce que je n'ai point d'argent.

Oui, l'armée anglaise s'est emparée de plusieurs forte-

resses.

Voici une demi-bouteille de vin blanc, un morceau de pain et de fromage.

B. I. Will you have beef or mutton?—Bring me some veal. 2. Last night I received news from Japan. 3. Who is ringing?—They (=\omega) are poor men asking for bread.

4. Are there many mistakes in my French translation?—Yes, I have underlined them with red ink. 5. If I had any money about (=upon) me, I should buy you a jew's harp, my dear little Charley! 6. I would rather have some buns.

7. I want some salt!—Salt?—Yes, to season the meat you are going to give me. 8. Horses are useful animals.

9. Birds have feathers. 10. Blackberries were plentiful last autumn. 11. Children are fond of sweets. 12. More flies are taken (say—one takes more...) with honey than with vinegar.

# Soixante-septième Leçon. III.—Le Substantif déterminé par un Substantif attributif (p. 48).

- A. 1. Avez-vous une montre d'or ou une montre d'argent?
- 2. Comment distinguezvous les différents genres de moulins?
- 3. Vous oubliez les moulins à café!
- 4. Et quelle est la fonction de la préposition à dans café au lait; glace à la vanille?
- 5. Et quels rapports la préposition de sert-elle à marquer?
- 6. Veuillez bien me citer des exemples à l'appui.
- 7. Qu'est ce qu'une do-

Non seulement j'ai une montre d'or, mais aussi des breloques en or.

Selon leur force motrice; il y a des moulins à vent, des moulins à eau, des moulins à vapeur, etc.

Oh, ça, c'est tout autre chose; ici à s'emploie pour marquer la destination.

La préposition  $\dot{a}$ , dans une infinité de cas, sert à indiquer avec son complément la qualité essentielle.

De sert à marquer des rapports de départ, d'extraction, d'origine, d'appartenance, de matière, de contenu, etc.

Volontiers: la pomme de terre, le bleu de Prusse, le chemin de fer, l'huile d'olive, le port de mer, une tasse de thé.

C'est un poisson de mer à écailles dorées.

B. I. Is not the north wind very cold? 2. The town hall is in the midst of the chief town. 3. Go to the post-office and fetch me a postage stamp. 4. Have you read "Vanity Fair"? 5. I wish (that) this money-bag were full of money. 6. I prefer Champagne to Burgundy. 7. The English steam-boat entered the port at half-past twelve. 8. I have had a cup of tea and a cream tart. 9. Green's History of England is a masterpiece. 10. "An iron hand in a velvet glove," answers to the Latin, "Fortiter in resuaviter in modo."

#### Soixante-huitième Leçon. Feminin et Pluriel des Adjectifs (pp. 47-52).

A. 1. Mettrez-vous votre nouvel habit demain?

2. Si vous avez soif, voici un verre d'eau fraiche.

3. Cette Italienne est-elle bonne actrice?

4. Que représente cette belle statue antique?

5. Les nuits ne sont-elles pas très longues?

6. Fait-il sec dans les rues maintenant?

Non, je mettrai mon vieil habit.

Donnez - moi plutôt . un verre de bière anglaise.

Oui, et elle est aussi excellente cantatrice.

Elle représente la Diane chasseresse.

Oui, je les trouve trop longues.

Non, les rues ne sont pas encore sèches.

### Position of Adjectives.

Most French Adjectives are placed after the Noun; not a few, however, are placed before; and others, again, may be placed before or after, but with a different meaning (see Appendix).

### (1) Place after the Noun-

(a) Adjectives derived from Proper Nouns: as,

La langue française. Le culte catholique.

The French language. The catholic worship.

(b) Adjectives denoting colour, shape, or taste: as, Le vin rouge; un chapeau rond. Un goût amer.

Red wine; a round hat. A bitter taste.

(c) Participles and Adjectives derived from Participles: as. Le roi conquérant. The conquering king. L'ordre accoutumé. The accustomed order.

(d) Adjectives much longer than the Noun they qualify: as, La vie champêtre. The country life.

(c) Adjectives ending in -al, -il, -if, -ique, -ible, -able, -eur: as, The ideal world. Le monde idéal. The zoological garden. Le jardin zoologique, etc.

(f) Adjectives with a complement: as, Un action digne de récompense.

An action deserving a reward.

#### (2) Place before the Noun-

(a) the Adjectives—bon, mauvais, méchant, beau, joli, grand, gros, petit, jeune, vieux; as,

*Un bon cheval; le beau* jardin. La grande rue; le petit enfant. A good horse; the fine garden. The large (high) street; the little child.

Une mauvaise prononciation.

Le joli chat; Une grosse somme.

Le jeune homme; La vieille semme.

A bad pronunciation.

The pretty cat; a large sum.

The young man; the old woman.

A bad pronunciation.

(b) Adjectives used figuratively, or as a merely ornamental epithet: compare-

Les noirs (gloomy) chagrins. Le cruel tyran. Le vaillant capitaine.

Un habit noir. Un homme cruel. Un peuple vaillant.

In habit noir, the Adjective is necessary to distinguish habit from other habits not of the same colour; whilst in noirs chagrins, the Adjective is not necessary (griefs as a rule being gloomy), but is simply added for the sake of picturesque effect. The same distinction holds good with the other examples.

DRILL: Give the Feminine of-Le martyr chrétien; le bon voisin; ce jeune jardinier; un fils obéissant; mon cher ami; votre petit frère; quel gentil enfant; leur père heureux; un dieu vengeur; son riche parrain; les pêcheurs écossais; leur maître bénin; ces lions furieux; ce vieux juif; ton joli petit chien blanc.

B. 1. Your black ink is very thick, is it not? 2. This Greek history is very fine, but rather long. 3. The dry figs that we have bought are very sweet. 4. I am afraid (that) he deludes himself with foolish hopes. 5. All men ought to be equal before the law. 6. What enchanting music! 7. Which is your favourite colour? — Yellow. 8. Yellow! what a funny taste you have! 9. The thistle is armed with (= of) sharp points. 10. He was attacked by a malignant fever; his pains were very acute. 11. This news is false. 12. His conduct is not frank. 13. The enchanting voice of the sirens was very deceitful. not a mutual esteem the first foundation of a true friendship?—Of course! 15. He has red hair.

# Soixante-neuvième Leçon. Formation du Féminin.

DRILL: Give the Feminine of-L'ambassadeur anglais; ce gouverneur grec; votre humble serviteur; le grand duc; le prêtre romain; Louis le jeune chasseur; l'empereur allemand; le héros grec; le louq affamé; le vieux devin; mon fidèle compagnon; l'esclave nègre; ce célèbre chanteur; le vieil enchanteur; le jeune maltre; mon gendre; mon beau neveu; le pécheur endurci; le pêcheur italien.

#### Soixante-dixième Lecon.

A. 1. La tempérance n'estelle pas le meilleur médecin?

- 2. Vous laissez vous rebuter par les difficultés?
- Quels sont les pires des ennemis?
- 4. Cet étang est plus profond que vous *ne* croyez.
- 5. N'aimez-vous pas mieux la soupe au riz que la soupe aux choux?
- 6. Ne ferait-il pas mieux de se taire?

# Comparaison des Adjectifs.

Oui, et le travail est le meilleur cuisinier.

Non, car plus une chose est difficile, plus il y a de mérite à la faire.

Ce sont les flatteurs.

Il n'y a de pire eau que l'eau qui dort (Prov.).

Si, la soupe au riz est beaucoup meilleure.

Oui, quand on n'a rien à dire, le meilleur est de se taire.

(a) Any Verb depending on a Comparative must take ne. The use of the negation in such sentences is easily explained by inverting the sentence:—You do not think how difficult it is; as,

Cela est plus difficile que vous I hat is more difficult than you ne croyez.

think.

(b) After plus . . . plus . . . , moins . . . . , the Nous or Adjective compared stands after the Verb; as,

Plus on est riche, (et) plus on a The richer one is, the more friends d'amis.

Moins on a de soucis, plus on est The fewer cares one has, the happier heureux.

- (c) After a Superlative the English in is generally rendered by de; as, La plus belle ville du monde (de The finest town in the world (in la France).

  France).
- (d) A Verb depending on a Superlative is, as a rule, put in the Subjunctive Mood; as,

C'est le plus méchant garçon que He is the most naughty boy I know. je connaisse.

B. 1. Which is, in your opinion, the best French Dictionary? 2. Littré's large French Dictionary is incomparably the best of all. 3. [The] more you use it, [the] more you will like it. 4. That is certainly the worst apple that I have ever eaten. 5. [The] less luggage you have, [the] more easily you will travel. 6. I have not the least idea of his plans. 7. Of two evils we must avoid the worse.

8. The weather is better to-day than it was yesterday.
9. This is the best rule that I can give you. 10. There are none so deaf as those who will not hear.

#### Soixante-et-onzième Leçon. Adjectifs Numéraux: Dimensions (p. 55).

Le mur est haut de trois mètres (de The wall is three mètres high. 3m. de hauteur).

Ce jardin a cent trente-cinq pieds This garden is 135 jeet long. de long (de longueur).

trois chevaux.

Une maison longue de soixante pieds. A house sixty feet long.

Excess or difference of measure is expressed by de: as,

Il est plus âgé que vous \ de deux \ He is two years older than you. Il est votre ainé He is your senior by two years. ans. Le chameau portait plus de dix The camel was carrying more than

quintaux. ten quintals. A camel can carry more than three Un chameau peut porter plus que

horses (i.e. can carry). \* It will be seen from these examples that the common rule, "render " is quite than by de before numerals, and by que before other words, misleading.

A. Les pyramides d'Egypte étaient au nombre de vingt. La plus grande, dont le circuit est de deux cent dix mètres, fut mise au nombre des sept merveilles du monde. Cent mille ouvriers y travaillèrent pendant trente ans de suite; elle coûta des sommes immenses, puisqu'une partie des légumes fournis aux ouvriers coûtèrent plus de quatre-vingtquinze mille sept cents francs. Elle occupe à elle seule quatre hectares de terrain; les quatre faces ont chacune deux cent soixante mètres de hauteur.

Système métrique.—On mesure les longueurs avec le mètre. Le décimètre est dix fois plus petit que le mètre. Le centimètre est cent fois plus petit. Le mètre est contenu quarante millions de fois dans le tour de la terre. Mille mètres font un kilomètre.

B. r. What is the height of this pine-tree?—It is fortyfive feet high. 2. The river is twelve feet deep. 3. How much do 3/4 and 3/8 make?—3/8. 4. Molière, the great French poet, was born in Paris in 1622, and died there in 1673. 5. How old is your grandmother?—She is ninety-two. 6. In an hour and a half I shall have done. 7. The new man-of-war is three hundred [and] twenty-five feet long. 8. The old hunter used to eat two pounds of beefsteak; he could eat more than three ordinary mortals. 9. He is a head taller 10. Who is the richest man in the town than his brother.

### Soixante-douzième Leçon. Adjectifs Numéraux (Suite).

A. 1. Quelle heure croyezvous qu'il soit?

2. A-t-il sonné midi?

3. Il est sept heures cinq à ma montre.

4. A quelle heure passerezvous chez nous?

5. Quel jour du mois avons-nous aujourd'hui?

6. Je croyais que nous étions déjà au premier février.

7. Oui fut le successeur

de Henri IV. ?

Il y a huit jours ;—quinze jours. D'aujourd'hui en huit, en quinze (jours). To-aay week, fortnight. Il y a de cela trois mois (six mois).

quinze mois. ,, dix-huit mois. Quelle heure est-il? Cinq heures (et) un quart.

Il est cinq heures et demie. Il est six heures moins dix minutes. A midi, minuit (never douze heures). Il est midi et demi.

Trois heures viennent de sonner (sont sonnées).

Il s'en va minuit.

Il s'en faut d'un jour ou deux.

Je crois qu'il est onze heures vingt minutes.

Il est déjà midi et quart. Votre montre avance de dix minutes, car il n'est que

sept heures moins cinq. Nous comptons passer chez vous sur (vers) les dix

heures. ' C'est aujourd'hui le trente

et un.

Vous vous trompez d'un jour.

Ce fut Louis XIII.

A week ago ;-a 'ortnight ago. A quarter of (half) a year ago. A year and a quarter since. half since. What o'clock is it? A quarter past five. It is half-past five.

It is ten minutes to six. At twelve o'clock (noon), midnight. It is half-past twelve. It has just struck three o'clock.

It is going to strike twelve (night). It wants a day or two.

B. r. Do you know what o'clock it is?—It is half-past 2. I thought (that) it was already a quarter to twelve. 3. Your watch gains a quarter of an hour. 4. Could you tell me what day of the month it is?—To-day is the 5. Shall you return to-day week?—No, we shall 6. Please to lend me the ninereturn to-day fortnight. 7. You will find teenth volume of the works of Voltaire. 8. Where did we that passage in the forty-first chapter. leave off yesterday?—We left off at page 497. 9. A quarter of a year ago we bought this house for £980, now it is worth more than £1,000. 10. We have been in Italy & year and a half.

#### IX.-PRONOUNS.

# Soixante-treizième Leçon. Pronoms Personnels Conjoints (p. 57).

- A. 1. Je vous demande de m'écouter!
- 2. Permettez-moi de vous accompagner jusqu'à la gare.
- 3. Leur avez-vous dit de rester?
- 4. Ne vous ai-je pas défendu de les fréquenter?
  - 5. Allez-vous-en!
- 6. Ne *vous* en allez pas encore!
  - 7. Laissez-moi en repos!
  - 8. Dépêche-toi donc!
- 9. Vous avez eu bon nez de venir nous voir !—Pour-quoi?

Eh bien, dépêchez-vous de me dire en quoi je puis vous servir.

Je vous défends de m'accompagner où que ce soit.

Au contraire, je *leur* ai dit d'aller se promener.

C'est vrai, vous me l'avez répété maintes et maintes fois.

Je m'en irai, quand bon me semblera.

Nous ne *nous* en irons pas avant vous.

Et vous, mêlez-vous de vos affaires!

Dépêchez-vous vous-même. Parce que nous avons une heureuse nouvelle à vous apprendre.

B. I. I offer you my friendship. 2. We shall send them to Brussels. 3. Has the gardener gathered the walnuts?—He has not yet gathered them. 4. Has the cook boiled the eggs?—She has boiled them long ago. 5. Do you know the truth?—I know it. 6. Are you looking for me?—No, I am not looking for you. 7. Tell (to) him to stay. 8. You did not expect him, did you?—Yes, I did. 9. Does he feel the draught?—He does feel it. 10. We wrote to them last week. 11. Have you known my nephew?—I have known him very well. 12. Speak to him! 13. Follow me!—I am ready to follow you to the end of the world! 14. Then, don't follow me! Stay rather at home! 15. Don't bring me any wine, but bring me a glass of fresh water.

A. 1. Si vous venez nous voir, amenez votre frère.

2. Apportez-vous les journaux que vous nous avez promis?

3. Emmenez ce marmot, il me rompt la tête avec ses cris continuels!

4. Prêtez-moi cette revue pour un moment, je voudrais en lire quelques pages.

5. Veuillez me prêter votre voiture, j'en ai besoin pour aller à Genève.

6. Ne m'avez-vous pas dit que vous m'en voulez?

7. Je conviens que ma faute est grave, mais ne me la pardonnerez-vous pas?

# Soixante-quatorzième Leçon. Pronoms Personnels (Suite).

Je ne manquerai pas de l'amener.

Nous vous les apporterons ce soir.

Eh bien, puisqu'il vous ennuie je l'emmènerai.

Emportez - la chez vous, vous la lirez à loisir.

Je le veux bien, si vous me promettez de me la ramener demain.

Oui, et je vous le répète.

Si vous vous en repentez, je vous la pardonnerai.

B. 1. Do you tell me the truth?—I always tell it to you. z. What a fine dog! will you give it to me?—I will give it to you with pleasure. 3. But you must promise me to treat him well.—I promise it to you. 4. What a difficult passage this is; please explain it to us. 5. If you like these pictures, I will give them to you. 6. Have I already shown you my collection of natural curiosities?—No, you have not yet shown it to me. 7. Bring your friend with you when you come to see me.—We shall not fail to bring him. 8. Bring me a cup of coffee.—I have already brought it to you. How many times have I not told it to him! ro. He took up a stone and threw it at him.

Un paysan alla un jour chez son voisin, pour & prier de lui prêter son âne. Ce voisin lui répondit qu'il l'avait prêté à un autre. Comme il s'excusait ainsi, l'âne se mit à braire. "Ah!" dit le paysan, "il faut avouer que vous êtes fort obligeant!" "Je vous trouve bien singulier," Lui répliqua le paysan, "de croire plutôt mon ane que moi-même."

# Soixante-quinzième Lecon. En, y, et le neutre (p. 58).

- A. 1. Venez-vous de Lon-dres?
- 2. Vous souvenez-vous de cet incident?
- 3. Ce négociant n'est-il pas digne de ma confiance?
- 4. Avez vous besoin de votre parapluie?
  - 5. Votre élève a-t-il obtenu
- un prix?
- 6. Votre plume ne va-telle pas bien?
- 7. Le temps ne passe-t-il pas bien vite?
- 8. Allez-vous à Douvres aujourd'hui?
  - 9. Est-elle malade?
- 10. On m'a dit que vos cousines sont enrhumées; est-ce vrai?

Oui, j'en viens.

Non, je ne m'en souviens plus du tout.

Je crois qu'il en est digne.

Oui, j'en ai besoin; il pleut à verse.

Il en a obtenu un.

Non, elle ne vaut rien; donnez m'en une autre.

En effet, il passe sans que nous nous en apercevions.

Non, je n'y vais pas; j'y ai déjà été.

Elle l'est, et le sera encore longtemps.

Oui, elles & sont depuis le dégel.

B. r. Was he not coming from home?—Yes, he was (i.e., coming from there). 2. Does he consent to our staying here?—No, he does not. 3. Are you the three Romans selected for the fight?—Yes, we are. 4. Are you ready?—Yes, we are. 5. Are the masters satisfied with your conduct?—No, they are not. 6. Do not think of it! 7. We repent of it. 8. We have expected it long ago. 9. If I want any money, I know that you will give me some. 10. How many letters have you received from home?—I have not received any at all. 11. Have you not been to the horse-fair?—No, but my brother-in-law has been there this morning. 12. I have not remembered it.

# Soixante-seixième Leçon. Pronoms Personnels Disjoints (p. 61).

Whenever à, to, complemented by a Personal Pronoun, is not the sign of the Dative proper—which is generally the case after Verbs of motion—the Disjunctive form of the Pronoun, after the Verb, must be used instead of the Conjunctive form before the Verb.

The Principal Verbs after which this rule holds good, are:—courir (accourir) d, to run (hasten) to; penser (songer) d, to think of; renoncer d, to renounce; être (appartenir) d, to belong to; aller d, to go to; venir d, to come to, and other Verbs of motion: compare—

Indirect Object:— Il me le donna. He gave it (to) me. Adverbial Compl.:—Il vint à moi. He came to me.

A. r. Parlez-vous de lui ou d'elle?

2. Parle-t-on de la guerre?

3. Le bruit court que l'Angleterre y prendra part; qu'en croyez-vous?

4. Ne pensez-vous jamais

5. Tu oublies qu'il est sans aucune ressource, songes-y bien!

6. Vous adresserez-vous à lui ou aux directeurs?

C'est de lui que je parle, et non pas d'elle.

Oui, on en parle continuellement.

Je n'en crois rien, nous n'aurions rien à y gagner.

Je pense très souvent à lui.

J'y songerai, je te le promets.

Nous nous adresserons à eux, c'est à eux ou aux directeurs qu'il appartient de s'en occuper.

DRILL: (1) Conjugate in all persons—Je suis chez moi; (2) Decline in all persons—Celui qui n'est pas pour moi est contre moi.

B. I. Do you sometimes think of me?—I often think of you, I assure you. 2. Are they speaking of us or of you?

—They are not speaking of us, they are speaking of him.

3. Did you know that the war had been declared?—I knew nothing about (of) it. 4. Shall you contribute to the fund?

—No, but my brothers will certainly contribute to it.

5. Are you not sorry for it? 6. Is he angry with you?—

No, it is with you (that) he is angry. 7. Remember it well!

—I shall remember it. 8. Don't blame me for it. 9. The victory is ours! 10. Shall you be at home?—Yes, we shall be at home from seven till half-past eight in the evening.

II. My friend and I have returned home.

## Soixante-dix-septième Leçon. Pronoms Possessifs (p. 62).

The Definite Article is used instead of the Possessive Pronoun, in speaking of parts of the body, whenever the context clearly shows who the possessor is:—

J'ai mal à la tête.

Il a mal (froid) aux pieds. Elle a perdu la vue. Donnez-moi la main. Il s'est cassé le bras. Un boulet lui emporta la jambe. I have a pain in my head (My head aches).
His feet are sore (cold).
She has lost her sight.
Give me your hand.
He has broken his arm.
A cannon ball carried off his leg.

Obs.—On the other hand, the French use the Possessive Pronouns in certain idiomatic expressions where the English use the Porsonal Pronoun:—

Avez-vouz eu de ses nouvelles? Iront-ils à sa rencontre? Saluez-le de ma part! Serez-vous des nôtres? Have you heard from him? Will they go to meet him? Greet him from me. Shall you join us?

- A. 1. Vous êtes bien pâle, qu'avez-vous?
- 2. M'apportez vous quelque chose de bon?
- 3. J'ai bien froid aux mains et aux pieds.
- 4. Vous m'avez marché sur le pied!
- 5. Viendrez vous à ma rencontre?
- 6. Ce cheval est-il à vous ou à eux?
- 7. Quelle mauvaise écriture que la vôtre!

J'ai mal à l'estomac.

Oui, fermez les yeux et ouvrez la bouche.

Eh bien, approchez-vous du feu, et chauffez-vous les pieds et les mains.

Je vous demande mille

pardons.

Je crains de me tromper de route.

Il n'est pas à nous, il est

Vous trouvez?—Oui, vos lettres sont de véritables pattes de mouches!

B. 1. What is the matter with him?—He has a pain in his chest. 2. Shall we soon hear from you?—Yes, you will hear from me in a week. 3. We shall send our coachman to meet them. 4. This poor child has con

hands. 5. What ails your sister?—She has sore eyes. 6. Are these postage-stamps his or yours?—They are mine. 7. What an awkward fellow! he trod upon her toes (= foot). 8. He has sprained his foot. 9. My feet are warm. 10. His foot slipped.

An Emperor of the Turks, having heard (= learned) that the famous General Scanderbeg had a sabre with which he cut off, with (of) one blow, the head of the greatest ox, asked him [for] it. (After) having received it, the fancy took him to try it, but he could not succeed in it. Then he reproached Scanderbeg with having deceived him. "Sire," Scanderbeg<sup>3</sup> wrote<sup>2</sup> to him<sup>1</sup>, "I had sent you my sabre, but not my arm."

# Soixante-dix-huitième Leçon. Pronoms Démonstratifs (p. 63).

A. 1. Qu'est-ce que c'est que cela?

2. Quelle est cette mon-

tagne majestueuse?

3. Ceci est bon, cela est mauvais.

4. Quel livre est-ce?

5. Quelle heure est il?

6. N'est-æ pas Molière qui est votre auteur savori?

C'est de la compote aux pommes.

C'est le Mont Blanc.

Eh bien, donnez-moi de ceci.

C'est un livre très intéressant.

Il est midi et demi.

Oui, c'est un grand poëte; il est incomparable.

B. 1. Who has said that?—It is Cicero who has said that. 2. It is possible that they are right. 3. They are wrong, it is easy to see. 4. What sort of a (=quel) man is he?—He is an honest man. 5. Is it not Spanish wine that you prefer?—Yes, it is excellent. 6. That is excellent. 7. Why do you not read Shakspeare instead of those insipid novels? 8. I know that he is the greatest poet, but he is so difficult to understand. 9. This is his, and that is hers. 10. Does he know these gentlemen or those? 11. That does not concern us.

# Soixante-dix-neuvième Leçon. Pronoms Interrogatifs (p. 67).

A. 1. Quel général a remporté la victoire de Tel-el-Kebir?

2. Lequel de ces deux généraux a été blessé?

3. De qui parlez - vous donc?

4. De quoi s'agit-il?

5. Qui avez-vous invité?

6. Que faites - vous la (Qu'est-ce que vous faites)?

7. A qui vous adresserezvous?

8. A quoi aboutissent leurs raisonnements?

C'est le général Wolseley.

C'est celui de la 1<sup>re</sup> division qui a été blessé.

Ce n'est pas de vous que nous parlons.

Il s'agit de vaincre ou de mourir.

Nous avons invité tous nos amis.

Nous faisons nos devoirs pour demain.

Je m'adresserai au ministre de l'intérieur.

Ils n'aboutissent à rien du tout.

CAUTION.—The English construction of putting the Preposition governing an Interrogative or Relative Pronoun at the end of the sentence (as, What is it about?) is never used in French.

B. I. In which form are you?—In the sixth. 2. To which of these two forms would you give the preference?—To the one in which you are, of course. 3. What prevents you from going for a walk more frequently?—It is the bad weather. 4. To what do you attribute his failure? 5. What is that magnificent building yonder on the hill? 6. What does this word mean? 7. On whom will the choice of the king fall? 8. What did he die of? 9. What is that? 10. Whose are all those mills? 11. Does he know what this word means? 12. What do they complain of?

# Quatre-vingtième Leçon. Pronoms Relatifs (p. 68).

A. I. Vous occupez-vous de botanique?

2. Connaissez - vous cet

Oui, c'est une science de laquelle je m'intéresse

Oui, c'est un homme d qu (auquel) on pent se fier-

- 3. Pensez-vous à l'affaire dont je vous ai entretenu?
- 4. Avez vous des amis sincères?
- 5. Qu'est ce que c'est qu'une boussole?
- 6. Et qu'est-ce qu'il y a de remarquable dans cette aiguille?
- Non, car c'est une affaire à la réussite de laquelle je ne suis pas intéressé.
- Oui, j'en ai dans l'expérience de qui (or, desquels) j'ai une entière confiance.

C'est une sorte de cadran au centre *duquel* est fixée une aiguille.

C'est une aiguille dont la pointe aimantée se dirige toujours vers le nord.

B. 1. Where is the messenger who has brought me this parcel? 2. Here is the messenger whom he has sent to you. 3. Do you know the man of whom we are speaking? 4. Yes, he is the man whose son obtained the first prize. 5. This is the friend to whom I owe everything. 6. (The) botany is a science to which I devote all my time. 7. The pens with which I write are steel pens. 8. The traveller with whom we went to Venice has not yet returned. 9. That is an event which I do not recollect. 10. Those are actions (of) which you will repent. 11. Every family is a natural society whose chief is the father.

# Quatre-vingt-unième Leçon. Pronoms Relatifs (Suite) (p,70).

A 1. We must be careful in the choice of the persons to whom we give our confidence 2. You have habits (to) which you must renounce. 3. Conscience is a judge whose decisions must be respected 4. I perceive in the distance an object the form of which I cannot distinguish. 5. A man on whose promises we cannot rely does not deserve our confidence. 6. The Alps are mountains the summits of which are covered with (=of) snow. 7. The first person is the one that speaks, the second is that to whom one speaks, the third is that of whom one speaks. 8. Stop! said the soldier from whose hands the prisoner tried to escape. 9. I have friends on whose faith I can rely. 10. The place in which you have hidden your treasure is not safe.

B. 1. What one has is better than what one hopes. 2. Enjoy (of) what you possess. 3. He asked the king what I was thinking about so seriously. 4. He gives a pleasant turn to everything that he says. 5. I cannot (=do not) see in what I can be useful to you. 6. They consented at last to that which I proposed. 7. What surprises me is the audacity with which he maintains his falsehood. 8. Tell me what you complain of. 9. They say it will rain, which is not probable. 10. We know what you know. 11. He never returns what one lends to him.

### Quatre-vingt-deuxième Leçon. Pronoms Indéfinis (p. 71).

B. 1. We travelled the whole day and the whole night.

2. There was such a crowd of people that one could not move.

3. No power on earth can help us.

4. Give me another glass of wine.

5. They avoid each other.

6. The heavenly bodies act upon each other.

7. Both have come.

8. Neither the one nor the other has come.

9. Such a man is rewarded who deserves to be punished.

10. Has the minister received reliable intelligence?

11. We Englishmen are not so frivolous as you Frenchmen!

12. The whole town knows [of] it.

13. Such behaviour is unworthy of an honest man.

14. Such terms will not be accepted.

15. These rose-trees cost five francs each.

16. Is there anybody at the carriage-gate?

17. If he is fond of pineapples, give him a few.

18. You are wanted.

# Quatre-vingt-troisième Leçon. Adverbes (p. 73).

Ton exercise est bon, il est bien écrit. Celui-ci est meilleur, il est mieux écrit.

Celui-là est le meilleur, c'est le mieux écrit.

A. 1. Vous avez placé cela trop haut!

2. Pourquoi ces œuss sentent-ils mauvais?

Your exercise is good, it is well written.

This one is better, it is better written.

That one is the best it is written.

That one is the best, it is written the best.

Et moi qui croyais l'avoix

Parce qu'ils ne sont pa

Parce qu'ils ne sont pa

Parce qu'ils ne sont pas frais pondus.

- 3. Cette plante est elle
- 4. Sa conduite n'est elle pas inconsidérée?
- 5. Ces écoliers sont-ils attentifs?
- 6. Les nôtres ne se sont-ils pas montrés très courageux dans cette affaire?
- 7. Ces demoiselles ne sontelles pas fort bien?

Oui, on la trouve assez rarement.

Oui, je trouve qu'il a agi très inconsidérément.

Je crois que oui, du moins ils semblent écouter très attentivement.

Oui, ils se sont battus fort courageusement.

Oui, l'aînée n'est pas mal du tout.

B. 1. Is not his letter very well written?—Yes, it is better written than yours. 2. Do not speak so low. 3. I cannot hear you distinctly. 4. Gently, my friend. 5. These fresh roses smell very sweet. 6. These landscapes by Turner are (= cost) very dear. 7. It is better late than never. 8. I think quite differently. 9. Don't speak so quick, if you wish me to understand you. 10. Six persons can sit very comfortably in this carriage. 11. Do you know anything new?—Yes, Queen Anne is dead. 12. If you explained yourself more clearly, I should understand better what you mean.

# Quatre-vingt-quatrième Leçon. Adverbes de Négation.

A. I. Shall you ever forgive me?—Yes; but don't do it (say—do not come to it) again. 2. I do not owe you anything; do I? 3. Nothing passes more quickly than time. 4. Is it well done?—I think so.—But I think not. 5. I thank you very much. 6. He has only done five sentences. 7. She has never refused (to) her children anything. 8. Has anybody been here?—Nobody. 9. This sick child hardly eats anything. 10. I do not eat anything either. 11. There is nothing that I would not do (Pres. Subj.) to oblige you. 12. I have never seen anything so beautiful as the sunrise in the Alps

### The principal English Prepositions and their various renderings in French.

#### ABOUT.

in the sense of around—

Look about you.

Regardez autour de vous ; prenez garde à vous.

Why keep such people about you?

Pourquoi garder de telles gens auprès de vous?

(2) denoting nearness in time and space -

He is about ten years old.

Il a environ dix ans.

It is about noon.

Il est vers midi.
Il s'en va midi.

About eight o'clock.

Sur les (vers) huit heures.

I am (I was) about to leave. Have you your knife about you? Je vais (j'allais) partir. Avez-vous votre couteau sur vous?

(3) in the sense of concerning, with regard to-What are you talking about? What are you thinking about? I am uneasy about him.

De quoi parlez-vous? A quoi songez-vous? Je suis inquiet sur son compte.

ABOVE.

2,000 feet above the sea-level,

In the sense of higher than, more than, upwards of-2,000 pieds au-dessus du niveau de

Above an hour.

la mer. Plus d'une heure.

#### AFTER.

(I) with respect to time, place, order, rank-

After noon; after a time.

Après midi : au bout de quelque temps.

Dzv after dav.

De jour en jour. Le lendemain.

The day after. Let us breakfast, after which we will start.

Déjeunons, après quoi nous nous mettrons en route.

(2) in the sense of from, according to-

After nature. After the French fashion. D'après nature.

A la (mode) française.

#### AT.

(I) Time when, place where -

At what time?—At noon. At the same time.

At London; at home.

At school; at church.

At sea; at hand.

He entered at the window. At a fountain,

A quelle heure?—A midi.

En même temps. A Londres; à la maison (chez moi. A l'école; à l'église. (etc-)

Sur mer ; sous la main. Il entra par la fenêtre.

Auprès d'une fontaine.

(2) answering to the question at what !-

To play at cards.

Jouer aux cartes.

#### BEFORK.

(I) in time, rank, order-

Before ten o'clock.

Avant dix heures.

The day before yesterday. The adjective in English is put before the noun.

Avant hier. En anglais l'adjectif se place avant le substantif.

(2) in place-

Before the house. Before my eyes.

Devant la maison. Sous mes yeux.

N.B.—(a) A year before (adverb).
(b) Before you go there (conj.)

Un an auparavant. Avant d'y aller, or avant que vous y alliez.

#### BY.

(I) indicating neighbourhood, nearness...

By the fire; by the wayside.

Près du feu; sur le bord de la route : au bord du chemin. Assieds-toi à côté de moi. Tout près.

Je n'en ai pas sur moi.

Sit by me. Close by. I have none by me.

(2) indicating time-

By day; by night. By the end of the week. By this; by this time twelvemonths. A ce moment; d'ici à un an.

De jour; de nuit. Vers la fin de la semaine.

(3) denoting instrument, medium, way, etc.-

By post; by this means. By land and by water. To know by name, by sight. It is six by my watch. To judge by his appearance. You will gain nothing by it. To sell by pounds; by weight. By the week.

Par la poste; par ce moyen. Par terre et par eau. Connaître de nom, de vue. Il est six heure: à ma montre. A en juger d'après son air. Vous n'y gagnerez rien. Vendre à la livre; au poids. A la semaine.

(4) denoting comparison, proportion-

Older by ten years.

Plus âgé (or-mon, ton, etc., ainé) de

#### FOR.

(I) in the sense of instead of, in exchange, in behalf of, for the sake of-

He offered me a pound for my dog.

Il m'offrit vingt-cinq francs de (pour) mon chien.

That will serve me for a blanket. In reward for his services. To die for the fatherland. For example, for instance.

Cela me servira de couverture. En récompense de ses services. Mourir pour la patrie.

Par exemple.

(2) in the sense of concerning, about, as regards, with respect to-As for me (for my part). Quant à moi.

(3) in the sense of because of, out of-He cannot contain himself for joy. For fear of offending him. I am sorry for it.

Il ne se sent pas de joie. De crainte de l'offenser. J'en suis fâché.

(4) denoting fitness, meetness, duty, etc.-

It is for tyrants to fear. It was for you to obey.

C'est aux tyrans à trembler.

C'était votre devoir (à vous) d'obéir.

CAUTION.—For, denoting a period, past or pending, is generally not to be rendered by pour:—

I have not seen him for a long time. Il y a longtemps que je ne l'ai vu. He has been playing for this hour. Voilà une demi-heure qu'il est à

jouer.

He only stayed for a week.

Il ne s'arrêta qu'une (pendant) semaine.

We have watched him for hours.

Nous l'avons regardé faire des heures entières, or, Nous avons passé des heures à le regarder faire.

He has been known for many years. On le connaît depuis bien des années.

#### FROM.

(1) in the sense of away from-

From Paris' to Lyons. I come from there. He was from home.

De Paris à Lyon. J'en viens. Il était sorti.

(2) in the sense of down from -

He looked from the hill.

Il regarda du haut de la colline.

(3) in the sense of on the part of -Greet him from me.

Saluez-le de ma part. Avez-vous eu de ses nouvelles ? Je n'ai pas eu de nouvelles de chez

Have you heard from him? I have not heard from home. (4) in the sense of according to, after-

From what I can see. D'après ce que je puis voir.

He did it from ignorance. I speak from my heart.

(5) in the sense of because of, out of-Il le fit par ignorance.

Je parle du cœur. (6) in the sense of since, from the time of-

From his infancy. From this day henceforward. On and from the 1st of July.

Depuis (dès) sa jeunesse. A partir d'aujourd'hui.
A partir du premier juillet.

N.B. - From after Verbs of Taking, Removing, etc., is generally rendered by a if followed by a Personal Pronoun, by the Indirect Objective case: -On lai prit sa montro. They took his watch from him.

(I) in the sense of inside, into (after Verbs of Motion), place where, time when-

(a) before Nouns qualified by an Article, Adjective, or Pronoun.

In this house (town).

In Southern France.

In the winter of 1812.

In the Crimean War. In a month (fortnight).

dans le midi de la France. Dans l'hiver de 1812. Dans la guerre de Crimée. Dans un mois (quinze jours).

Dans cette maison (ville). Dans la France méridionale, or

(b) before Nouns not qualified by any Determinative Article Adjective, etc.

In town; in France.

In winter; in times of war. In a month's time.

En ville ; en France.

En hiver; on guerre.

En un mois.

(c) before Names of Towns, Villages, Localities, etc.

In Paris; in Dom Remy.

In the first floor.

In the kitchen, garden, etc. Sword in hand.

A Paris; & Dom Remy.

Au premier étage.

A la cuisine, au jardin, etc.

L'épée à la main.

(d) after a Superlative.

The finest house in the town. La plus belle maison de la ville.

(e) in the sense of during-

In this bad weather.

Par ce mauvais temps, or par k mauvais temps qu'il fait.

(f) in the sense of under-

In the reign of William the Third. Sous le règne de Guillaume III.

(2) in the sense of with respect to, according to-

In this manner; the manner in De cette manière; la manière dont. which.

(3) denoting proportion-

One in a thousand. Nine times in ten.

Un sur mille. Neuf fois sur dix.

OF.

(1) denoting extraction, possession, quality-Il est natif de Paris.

He is a native of Paris.

The palace of the king.

A friend of mine.

A man of merit.

Le palais du roi. Un ami & moi.

Un homme de mérite.

Doctor of law; student of medicine. Docteur en droit; étudiant en médecine.

(2) denoting time-

. Il venait le soir. He used to come of an evening.

(3) in the sense of about, among-

Think of him; think of it. Several of them.

Pensez à lui ; songez-y. Plusieurs parmi eux.

(4) in the sense of on the part of-

It is not nice of him to have acted Ce n'est pas gentil à lui d'avoir agi thus ainsi.

#### OFF

A mile off the coast.

A un mille de la côte. Le vaisseau était à la hauteur de The ship lay off Dover.

Douvres. "Didon dina, dit-on, du dos d'un Dido dined, it is said, off the back of a fat turkey. dodu dindon."

#### ON, UPON.

(1) denoting position above -

On (upon) the table. Frankfort-on-the-Main.

On our knees.

On board a ship.

On horseback; on foot.

Sur la table. Francfort-sur-le-Mein.

A genoux.
A bord d'un vaisseau. A cheval; à pied,

(2) denoting position, nearness, direction, etc.-

A droite, à gauche; du côté droit On the right (left) side. (gauche).

On this side.

De ce côté-ci. (3) denoting time, dates, circumstances, occasion, etc.-

On the 30th of June. Le 30 juin. On Monday next. Lundi prochain. On a dark night. Par une nuit sombre. A son arrivée.

On his arrival. On being told.

N.B.-With names of-

(1) Titles, headings: On Usury.
(2) Instruments: To play on the flute.

De l'Usure. Jouer de la flute,

Lorsqu'on lui dit.

#### OUT OF.

(I) in the sense of outside, without-

He ran out of the house. To throw out of doors.

Il courut hors de la maison.

Mettre & la porte.

(2) in the sense of through, across-

She looks out of the window. Elle regarde par la fenêtre.

(3) in the sense of from out-

He drank out of my glass. Il but dans mon verre.

(4) in the sense of on account of—

Out of spite (cowardice). Out of fun (fear).

Par dépit (lâcheté). Par plaisanterie (peur).

#### THROUGH.

(I) in the sense of across, athwart, via-

He cut his way through the enemy. Il se fit jour à travers (au travers de) l'ennemi.

On going to Paris, I passed through En allant à Paris, je passai par Rouen. Rouen.

(2) in the sense of because of, owing to, thanks to -Through neglect. Par négligence. It is through him that I obtained it. C'est grace à lui que je l'ai obtenu.

#### TILL, UNTIL.

Till to-morrow. It was not until then. Not until this evening.

N.B.-Till, conjunction :-Stay till he returns.

Jusqu'à demain, d'ici à demain. Ce ne fut qu'alors. Pas avant ce soir.

Attendes jusqu'à ce qu'il revienne.

(1) denoting motion towards, before Names of Countries used indeterminately-

To go to England. Aller en Angleterre.

N.B.—Before names of towns, villages, etc., see in = à.

(2) in the sense of as far as-

Read to the end of the chapter. Lisez jusqu'à la fin du chapitre.

(3) in the sense of towards: (a) Motion-

Raise your eyes to heaven. The way to Passy.

Levez les yeux vers le ciel. Le chemin de Passy. Midi moins un quart. A quarter to twelve.

(b) Feeling, Disposition-

Be charitable to the poor. Soyez charitables envers les pauvres.

### TOWARDS.

(I) in the sense of in the direction of, time approaching -The child ran towards the door. L'enfant courut vers la porte. Towards the end of the year. Vers la fin de l'année.

(2) denoting feeling, disposition [comp. to, 3, (b)]-Pious towards God. Pieux envers Dieu.

#### UNDER.

(1) in the sense of below, beneath, underneath... Under my roof. Sous mon toit. He carried a parcel under his arm. Il portait un paquet sous le bras.

(2) in the sense of less than-

Tous les hommes au-dessous de All men under seventy. ens xib-staxios.

#### WITH.

(1) denoting together with, attended by, material or instrument— Come with me. Venez avec moi.

To pave with bricks. To write with a pen. Carreler avec de la brique. Ecrire avec une plume.

(2) denoting the manner-

To defend one's self with courage.

With all my heart.

Se défendre avec courage. De tout mon cœur.

(3) denoting an accessory circumstance or characteristic feature— With tears in his eyes. Les larmes aux yeux. The man with the red nose. L'homme au nez rouge.

(4) in the sense of at the house (home) of, in possession of—

How is it with you?

Comment cela va-t-il ches vous?

Such was the custom with the Romans.

Comment cela va-t-il ches vous?

Telle était la coutume ches les Romains.

(5) denoting measure, fulness—
Supplied (replete, filled, covered, Fourni, pourvu (rempli, couvert, etc.) with.

etc.) de.

(6) denoting cause, feeling -

To blush with shame. To be satisfied with. Rougir de honte. Etre content (satisfait) de.

# Quatre-vingt-cinquième Leçon. Prépositions.

A. 1. De quoi êtes-vous fâché?

2. Est-il aimé de ses condisciples?

3. Jouez-vous du piano?

4. Jouez-vous aux cartes?

5. On m'a dit que le renard a pris trois poules à mon voisin!

6. Demeurez - vous en France?

7. A quelle heure vous levez-vous en hiver?

8. Votre verger est-il devant la maison ou derrière?

Je suis *fâché de* sa mésaventure.

Oui, et ils l'honorent tous de leur confiance.

Oui, et ma sœur joue de la harpe.

Jamais, mais je joue volontiers aux échecs.

Oui, et il *lui* a pris deux lapins.

Oui, dans la France méridionale.

En hiver je me lève avant vous; c'est à dire, à sept heures moins un quart

Il est en face des abattoirs.

9. Le dictionnaire latin estil sur le pupitre ou dessous?

10. Ne s'est-il pas montré

ingrat envers yous?

11. N'est-ce pas vers le printemps que les hiron-delles reviennent?

Je crois qu'il est à côté de votre grammaire grecque.

Peu importe! Je ne suis pas fâché contre lui.

En effet, et elles s'en retournent vers l'hiver.

DRILL: Decline in all persons—(1) Me voici, Here I am; (2) Cela est à moi; (3) je m'en repens; (4) il me prend envie.

B. 1. We were not at all satisfied with him. 2. Is not the banker the richest man in the town?—He is. 3. Can you sing?—No, but I can play on the violin. 4. You ought to have told me that before. 5. The fountain is before the house. 6. In summer we rise before half-past six. 7. Mend that before it is too late. 8. He is on a journey. 9. *On* the first instant we shall be in Paris. 10. He lives in Belgium.—In what part of Belgium?—In Ostend, I think. 11. Turn towards me. 12. These naughty children are very ungrateful towards their parents. 13. Which way shall we go, this or that? 14. There they are. 15. The 16. He was born in 1876. station is near the river. 17. They (one) took all his money from him.

# APPENDIX.

### I.—Principal Rules of Gender.

# (a) GENDER ASCERTAINED BY DERIVATION:

Upwards of 90 per cent. of French Nouns have the same gender as the Latin Nouns from which they are derived, reckoning the French Masculine as the substitute for the Latin Neuter Nouns, most of which were merged into the Masculine in French: as,

MASCULINE.

#### FRMININE.

First Latin Declension:

le poète [poeta], the poet.

la justice [justicia]; l'eau, water.

Second Latin Declension:

le livre [librum\*], the book. un exemple [exemplum], example. la méthode [methodus], method.

Third Latin Declension:

le pied [pedem], foot. le temps [tempus], time. la vertu [virtutem], virtue. la liberté [libertatem], liberty.

Fourth Latin Declension:

le grade [gradus], rank.

la main [manus], hand.

Fifth Latin Declension:

le midi [meridiem], noon.

une effigie [effigiem], a figure, image.

Important Exception.—Most French Nouns in -eur, though nearly all derived from Latin Nouns in -or, -oris, are feminine +:—la chaleur, heat; la fleur, flower; la peur, fear; la faveur, favour.

(b) Gender ascertained by MEANING:

Masculine :- the Names of-

Males:—l'homme, man; le garçon, boy; le lion.

Days, Months, Seasons, Winds:—le lundi, Monday; le mai, le printemps, spring; l'aquilon, north wind.

Metals, Mountains, Trees :- le fer, iron ; le Vésuve ; le pommier, apple-tree.

Other Parts of Speech used substantively :-

le boire et le manger, eating and drinking.

<sup>\*</sup> The Accusative Singular is given of most Latin derivations. t [Un honneur, le labeur, les pleurs, un amour, in the Singular, alone have remained faithful to their original gender.)

Feminine: - the Names of-

Tomales: -la semme, woman ; la fille, daughter, girl ; la poule, hen.

Virtues and Vices: - la charité; cette intempérance.

Holy-days: - la St. Jean (Midsummer day).

Obs. Names of Fruits, Flowers, Countries, Towns, and Rivers, as a rule, are-

Masculine, if not ending in e mute :- Feminine, if ending in e mute :-

la pomme, la rose, le raisin, le lis,

le Portugal, le Danemark, la France, la Grande Bretagne,

le beau Paris, cette opulente Carthage, le Khin (also-le Rhône). la Loire, la Tamise, Thames.

(c) GENDER ASCERTAINED BY TERMINATION:

(1) Masculine: Nouns ending in-

a sounded vowel or diphthong :- l'opéra, le café ; le feu, fire, etc. a consonant:—le plomb, lead; le dard, dart; le soleil, le complément, etc.

the following terminations in 6 mute:-

-aire, -age, -ège:—le dictionnaire ; le carnage ; le voyage ; le cortège. -asme, -isme, -iste: -cet enthousiasme; le schisme (pron. chiss-me). -cle, -ème, -ôme:—un article; le système; le diplôme.

(2) Feminine: Nouns ending in-

e mute \* preceded by a vowel or diphthong:-la proie, prey; la pluie, rain; une araignée, spider.

most other endings in a mute not mentioned above (1) Masc .: la bouteille, bottle; la présence, la constance, la campagne, etc.

-ion, -son, -çon: -la portion, la maison, la leçon, etc.

-eur, -té, -tié: —la faveur, la faculté, cette amitié.

### II.—Adjectives the meaning of which is affected by their position before or after the Noun.

une certaine chose, some thing. cher père, dear father.

un habit cher,

une chose certaine, a sure thing. an expensive coat.

différentes choses \ several(sundry) des articles diffé- \ various, differdiverses choses, things.

rents,

ent things.

une sausse clef. a skeleton key. une fausse porte, a secret door. un honnête homme, honest man.

desarticlesdivers, ) une clef fausse, wrongkey(mus.) une porte fausse, sham door. un homme honnête, civil man.

<sup>\*</sup>The best corrective to the common, but very misleading, rule that Nouns ending in a wate are Feminine, is to be found in (a), i.e., French Nouns derived from Latin Macroline and Neuter Nouns are Masculine in French—is cardle [circulns]; is early learning.

un malhonnêt**e** dishonest man. [author. homme, indifferent un pauvre auteur, un plaisant conte, ridiculous tale. mon propre habit, my own coat. mon seul ami, my only friend. un vrai conte, a regular fib.

un homme mal- uncivil man. honnête, un auteur pauvre, needy author. un conte plaisant, amusing tale. un habit propre, clean coat. friend alone. un ami seul, un conte vrai, a true story,tale.

A few change their meaning only occasionally worthy man. un brave homme, unanimously. d'une commune voix, la dernière année. the last year of a period. man of genius. lady of rank. un grand homme, une grande dame, unméchant homme, wicked man. de méchants vers, por vers-s. un petit homme, a short man.

un homme brave, courageous man. une voix commune, vulgar voice.

last year.

l'année dernière.

un homme grand, tall man. une dame grande, tall lady. un homme méchant, slanderous man des vers méchants, stinging verses. un homme petit, mean fellow, etc.

# III.—Irregular Formation of Feminine of Nouns.

(a) Nouns which take -sse [esse = Lat. -issa] in the Feminine un abbé, abbot, une abbesse. une ânesse. un âne, ass, le chanoine, canon, la chanoinesse. le comte, earl, la comtesse. druid, la druidesse. le druide. l'hôtesse. l'hôte, host, thief, la larronnesse. le larron. le maître, master, la maîtresse. negro, la négresse. le nègre,

un ogre, ogre, une ogresse. le pair, peer, la pairesse. le pauvre, pauper, la pauvresse (fam.). priest, la prêtresse. prince, la princesse. le prêtre, le prince, le prophète, prophet la prophétesse. le Suisse, \* Swiss, la Suissesse. le tigre, tiger, la tigresse. le traître, traitor, la traîtres e.

Thus also, but with alteration of the Stemle dieu, god, la déesse. le duc, duke, la duchesse.

(b) Nouns which form their Feminine by changing their ending -our into -eresse (i.e. er-esse instead of eur-esse; the tonic accent falling on esse, the accented our is weakened into unaccented or; cp. je viens, n. venons, etc.).

le chasseur, hunter, le défendeur, defendant (Law), le demandeur, plaintiff (Law), l'enchanteur, enchanter, le pécheur, sinner. le pêcheur. the fisherman, le vendeur. vendor (Law),

la chasseresse, in poetica' style; otherwise la chasseuse.

la défenderesse. la demanderesse (demandeuse, t'e l'enchanteresse. [beggar). la pécheresse.

la pêcheuse. la venderesse.

la vendeuse, the seller (in general).

<sup>\*</sup> If used adjectively, those murked \* remain un hanged in the Fem.

l'empereur,

le cheval.

le fils,

```
Notice also-
```

le devin, soothsayer, la devineresse.

le doge, doge (of Venice), la dogaresse.

deacon, la diaconesse, or diaconisse; [mercy). le diacre, (la diaconesse, Protestant sister of

(c) Nouns which form their Feminine in -ice, -ante, -ine, -elle, -e, etc.: in most cases with alteration of the Stem-

l'impér**atrice.** 

la nièce.

la vache, cow.

la hase, doe-hare.

la perruche, hen-

parrot.

l'oie, goose.

Le chanteur, singer; la cantatrice, professional singer. but - la chanteuse, amateur singer. emperor,

le procureur, proctor. la procuratrice. le gouverneur, la gouvernante, governor, le serviteur, servant, la servante. shepherd-boy, le pastoureau. la pastourelle. lad, la jouvencelle. le jouvenceau, le compagnon, companion, la compagne. le chevreuil, roe-buck, la chevrette. le héros, hero, l'héroïne. le czar, tzar, la czarine. le roi, king, la reine. le dindon, turkey, la dinde. le chameau, camel, la chamelle. le caneton, duckling, la canette. high-bailiff, la baillive. le jum**eau**, twin, la jumelle. le bailli, fallow-deer, la daine. le coch**on,** pig, la coche. le daim, le lou**p,** wolf, duck, la lou**ve.** le canard, la cane. le vieillard, old man, le mulet. mule, la mule. la vieille.

le nourricier, foster-father, la nourrice. (d) Names of Persons and Animals which differ radically in the Masculine and Feminine-

le neveu,

le jars, gander;

parrot;

boar;

le lièvre, hare;

le perroquet,

nephew,

le bouc, he-goat; la chèvre, she-goat le bœuf, ox; la vache, cow.

le coq, cock; la poule, hen. l'étalon, stallion; la jument, mare.

le sanglier, wild la laie, wild sow.

le singe, monkey; la guenon, she-

l'homme, man; la femme, woman. le mari, husband; la femme, wife. monsieur, Mr., madame, Mrs.

son,

*horse*, la cavale.

la fille.

Sir, etc.; le père, father; la mère, mother. le frère, brother; la sœur, sister. le garçon, \* boy; la fille, girl.

l'oncle, uncle; la tante, aunt. le gendre, son-in- la bru, daughterlaw;

in-law. le parrain, god- la marraine, godmother.

father; moth le bélier, ram; la brebis, ewe.

le taureau, bull; la génisse, heiser. le verrat, boar; la truie, sow. Obs. 1. Many names of living beings have no special forms to denote their sex. and are either masc. or fem. in gender, irrespective of sex: as, le léopard, la panthère; le renne, la souris, etc.

The distinction of sex is expressed by adding mâle or femelle: as,

Un canari mâle, un canari femelle; un démon femelle, a she-devil.

Thus also with names of plants:—un palmier mâle, un palmier femelle.

Obs. 2. Most names of Professions remain unaltered, if applied to women:—
l'amateur, le docteur, le défenseur, l'auteur, l'écrivain, etc. Thus also—un ange, un témoin.

<sup>\*</sup> la garce is only used in a bad sense.

#### IV.—Alphabetical List of Irregular Verbs.

N.B.—For Compound Irregular Verbs see the simple Verbs from which they are severally derived; thus, for s'endormir, see dormir; for ressortir, see sortir; for ressortir, see sortir; for ressortir, see asseoir, etc. Except the following, the simple forms of which are quite obsolete or wanting:—

For those in -saillir (as tressaillir), see assaillir, p. 28-29.

- ,, ,, -cevoir (as apercevoir, etc.), see recevoir, p. 32-33.
  ,, ,-duire (as produire, etc.), see conduire, p. 36-37.
- ,, ,, -(s)truire (as instruire, etc.), see construire, p. 36-37.
- ,, ,, -(s)crire (as transcrire), see écrire, p. 36-37.
- ,, ,, -aindre, -eindre (as contraindre), see plaindre, ceindre, p. 36-37.

The Compounds in -soudre, -choir, -clure, -fire, -seoir, are all given separately; see absoudre, résoudre, p. 42.

•		• •									
		PAGE	<b>.</b> .	F	AGE		1	PAGE		P	AGE
absoudre	•	42	croître	•	40	maudire	•	38	requérir		31
acquerir		30	cueillir		28	mentir		26	résoudre		42
aller .		24	cuire		36	mettre	•	38	rire		38
apparoir		34	déchoir		34	moudre		42	saillir		28
assaillir.		28	devoir		32	mourir		30	savoir		32
asseoir		34	dire	•	38	mouvoir		32	seoir 34	,	35
asservir		27	dormir		26	naître		40	sentir		26
battre		38	échoir		34	nuire		36	servir		26
boire		40	éclore		42	oindre		37	sortir		26
bouillir		26	écrire		36	offrir		28	souffrir		28
braire		39	s'en aller		25	ouïr		28	sourdre		42
bruire		42	s'enquérir	•	31	ouvrir		28	suffire		38
ceindr <b>e</b>		36	envoyer		25	paître		40	suivre		38
choir		35	faillir		26	paraître		41	surseoir		34
clore		42	faire		38	partir		26	taire		40
conclure		40	falloir	•	32	peindre		37	teindre		37
conduire		36	feindre		37	plaindre	٠	36	tenir		30
confire		39	férir		30	plaire		40	traire		38
connaître			frire		42	pleuvoir		32	tressaillir		29
conquérir		31	fuir	•	28	poindre		37	vaincre		38
coudre		42	gésir	•	30	pourvoir	•	35	valoir		32
couvrir		28	haïr	•	17	pouvoir	•	32	venir		30
courir		30	issir		31	prendre	•	38	vêtir		28
courre		. 31	joindre	•	36	querir	•	31	vivre		42
eraindre		37	luire	•	36	recevoir	•	32	Voir		34
croire		. 40	lire	•	40	repentir	•	26	vouloir		32

### V.—Table of French, Latin, and English Suffixes.

#### (a) Suffixes generally spelt alike in French and English-

```
-al (alis):—canal, original.
-able (abilis):—affable, capable.
-ible (ibilis):—possible, sensible.
-enoe (entia):—absence, science.
-ent (entem):—constant, al ondant.
-able (aculum):—spectacle, oracle.
-âge (aticum):—âge, voyage.

-åge (egium):—sacrilège, cortège,
-ude (udo):—platitude, altitude.
-ice (itium):—vice, solstice.
-ice (itia):—notice, avarice.
-ice (itia):—notice, avarice.
-ice (itia):—médecine.
-ine (ina):—médecine.
-ine (ura):—nature, figure.
```

#### (b) Suffixes generally spelt differently in French and English-

French.	Latin.	English.	Example.
-aire	(arius, arium)	ary:	ordinaire = ordinary.
-ain	(anus, a, um)	an:-	humain = human.
-oire	(orius, a, um)	ory:—	victoire = victory.
-ance	(antia)	ancy:	enfance = infancy.
-eur	(or)	our :	honneur = honour.
-teur	(tor)	or:-	rasteur = pastor.
-eux	(osus)	∫ ous :—	copieux = copious.
	•	( <i>y:</i>	spongieux = spongy.
-ée	(ata)	y:	armée = army.
- <b>6</b> _	(atus)	y:— ∥	député = deputy.
-tó	(tas)	<i>y</i> :— ∥	charité = charity.
-ie	(ia)	<i>y</i> :— ∥	furie = $fury$ .
-ide	(idus)	id :	frigide $= fi$ igid.
-isme	(ismus)	ism:-	prisme = prism.
-iste	(ista)	ist:	copiste = copyist.
-ien	(ianus)	ian :—	chrétien = christian.
-if (f. ive)	(ivus)	ize :—	captif = captive.
-ique	(icus, a, um)	ic:-	musique = music.

#### (c) Verbal Suffixes-

```
-er = ate: déterminer = determinate.

-fler = fy : glorifier = to glorify.
-ir = ish : établir = to establish.

-iser = ise, ize : fraterniser = to fraternise.

-user = use : refuser = to refuse.

-user = use : computer = to compute.
```

# VOCABULARIES.

#### I.—FRENCH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

aimanté, magnetised.

#### A.

à, to, at, in, p. 98; in compound Nouns, § 13. abat-jour, m., lamp-shade, § 14, d. abattoirs, les, m., slaughter-house. aboutir à, to end in, p. 167. absolu, absous, P.P. of absoudre; absoudre, § 11, to absolve, p. 148. absous, absoute, absolved, p. 52. s'abstenir de, to abstain from. accès, m., fit. accompagner, to accompany. accourir, § 9, b, to hasten (run) to. accroire, faire -, § 11, g, to make believe. accroître, § 11, f, to grow. accueil, m., reception. accueillir, § 9, a, to welcome. acheter, § 3, a\*, to buy, purchase. achever, to finish, accompaish. acquerir, § 9, b, to acquire, p. 119. acquitter, s', to pay one's debt. actrice, f., § 16, c, actress. adieu, good-bye, farewell! s'adresser à, to apply to. affliger, to afflict, to grieve. âgé (de), p. 159. agir, § 7, to act. (il s'agit de, § 7, b.) aïoul, aïouls, grandfather. aïeux, § 12, IV., c, ancestors. aigu, § 15, Obs. 2, sharp. aiguille, f., needle. ail aulx, § 12, IV., c.

aimer, to love, to like. aimer (a), to be fond of, p. 98. aimer mieux, to prefer, to have rather, p. 96. aîne, elder, eldest, p. 159. ainsi, thus, so. aise, glad (aisé, easy). Allemagne, f., Germany. allemand, German. aller, s'en aller, § 8, to go (away), pp. 96, 113-14; y aller, § 7. aller prendre, to call for. alors, then. âme, f., soul. amener, to bring, lead. ami, f. amie, friend. amitié, f., friendship. amusant, amusing. amuser, to amuse. an, m., year. ancien, -ne, ancient, old. année, f., year, year's duration. âne, m., ass. anglais, English. anglais, -e, Englishman (woman). Angleterre, f., England. annoncer, to announce. a peine, hardly, scarcely, p. 85. apercevoir, § 10, to perceive, p. 120. apparoir, § 10, d. appât, m., § 12, IV., c. appartenir, § 9, b, to belong.
il appartient (&), it behoves. appeler, 8 3, to call.

•

s'appeler, to be called, p. 110. s'appliquer, to apply (one's self). apporter, to bring, carry. apprendre, § 11, d, to learn. approche, f., approach. approcher, to approach, to come appui, m., support, corroboration. après, after, prep., p. 99. après que, after, conj., p. 85. après-demain, day after to-morrow. arbre, m., tree. arc-en-ciel, m., § 14, rainbow. argent, I', m., silver, money. arranger, to arrange, to suit. arriver, p. 13, to arrive; to happen, impers., § 7. assaillir, § 9, b, to assail. asseoir, § 10, d, to seat. s'asseoir, to sit down, p. 132. asservir, § 9, a, to enslave. assez de, § 37, c, enough. astreindre, § 11, a, to compel. attaquer, to attack. atteindre, § 11, a, to reach, p. 133. attendre, to wait (for), to expect, p. 78. attente, f., waiting, expectation. attirail, m., § 12, IV., c. au, aux, § 12, to the, at the, for the, in the. auberge, f., inn. aubergiste, m., innkeeper, landlord. aucun, -e, § 36, b, none. aujourd'hui, to-day, this day. aune, f., ell. savoir ce qu'en vaut l'aune, to know the cost of a thing. auprès de, near. aussi, adv., also; conj., with inversion of verb and subject= consequently. aussi bien, in fact, anyhow. aussitôt, adverb, immediately, instantly. aussitôt que, conj., as soon as, p. 85. sutant (de), § 37, c.
suteur, m., § 38, Obs., author.
sutomne (m silent), m., autumn. sutre, § 36, b, other.

autrefois, formerly. avancer, to advance, to gain. avant, prep., before, p. 94. avant de, avant que, conj., before. avant-hier, the day before yesterday. SVec, with. avertir, to inform, warn. avis, m., advice, warning. s'a viser (de), to take it into one's head. avoir, to have, pp. 4, 105. y avoir, § 7. avouer, to own, to confess, to admit. B. baigner, se, to bathe. bal, le, pl. of, § 14, IV., c. banc, le, bench, seat, form. bannir, to banish. bas, basse, low, p. 52. bâtir, *to build*. battre, § 11, d, to beat, p. 143. se battre, to fight. beau, bel, belle, §§ 12, 16, fine, beautiful. beaucoup, §§ 12, b, 37, and 38, much, many, a great deal. begayer, to stammer. bénin, bénigne, § 16, benign. bénir, § 3, to bless. bercail, le, pl. of, § 12, IV., c. besoin, le, need, want.

avoir besoin de, to be in need of, to want. besogne, f., work, job. bête, la, beast, animal, brute, adj., stupid. beurre, le, butter. bien, § 38, well, very, very much. bienvenu, -e (le, la), welcome. bientôt, soon. bière, la, beer, ale. bijou, le, trinket, § 12, 1v., b. Obs bis, *brown*. blanc, blanche, § 16, white. blesser, to wound, hurt. bleu, § 12, IV., blue. blond, blonde, fair. boire, § 11, g, to drink, p. 147. bon, bonne, good. faire bon, to be comfortable. bon mot, le, witty saying.

1

bonheur, le, hoppiness, luck.
borne, la, timit.
botanique, la, botany.
botte, la, boot, truss, thrust.
bottier, le, bootmaker.
bouche, la, month.
bouillir, § 9, a, to boil, p. 116.
boulanger, le, baker.
bourse, la, purse, exhibition, Exboussole, la, compass. [change.
bout, le, end, bit, short space.
braire, § 11, e, to bray.
breloque, la, trinket.
bras, le, urm.
les btas m'en tombent, I am

guite dumfoundered.
brique, la, brick.
bruire, § 11, i, to rustle, to roar.
bruissement, le, roaring.
bruit, le, noise.
brûler, to burn.
brun, brown.
bu, P.P. of boire, § 11, b.
buvard, le, blotting-pad.

C. cacher, to conceal. cacheter, to seal. cadavre, le, corpse. cadeau, le, present. cadet, le, youngest. cadran, le, dial, face (of a watch). cafe, le, coffee, coffee-house. cahier, le, copybook. caillou, le, pl., § 12, IV., pebble. cal, le, pl., § 12, IV., c. camarade, le, comrade. camp, le, camp. Ía, fields. campagne, country, country-seat, campaign. canape, le, sofa, sofa-bedstead. cantatrice, la, § 17, b. capituler, to capitulate. car, for. carnaval, le, plur. of, § 12, IV., c. carte, la, card, map. casser, to break. cavalerie, la, cavalry. ce, cet, cette, adj., this; pron., 8 33, L

c'est and il est compared, pp. 65, ceci, cela, § 33, p. 66. ceindre, § 11, a, to gird. celui, celle, ceux, p. 66, c. ce que, ce qui, § 35 (2). centimètre, le = 100 mètre. cependant, yet. cerf-volant, le, § 14, a, kile. cerise, la, cherry. certain, § 36, a. chacal, le, pl. of, § 12, IV., c. chacun, chaque, § 36, e, each, every one. chambre à coucher, la, bedroom. champ, le, field. chandelle, la, candle. changer, § 3, g, to change, alter chant du coq, cock's crowing. chanter, to sing. chapeau, le, hat. chaque, § 36, a, each, every. charme, charmed, delighted. chasseur, le, § 16, g (4), huntsman, hunter. chat, le, cat. châtain, chesnut coloured. château, le, castle, country-seat. chaud, § 7, b, warm, hot. il fait chaud, it is warm. chauffer, to warm. chaux, la, lime. chef, le, chief. chef-d'œuvre, le, § 14, a, masterpiece. chemin, le, road, way.
grand chemin, le, highroad.
faire du —, to get on. cheminée, la, chimney. chemise, la, shirt. chêne, le, oak. cher, f. chère, dear, expensive. chercher, to seek, search, to look for, p. 78. cheval, le, horse. cheveu, le (capillum), hair, single. cheveux, les, m., hair (collect.) ches, § 31 (5), at the house of chien, le, dog. choir, § 10, c, to fall.
choisir, to choose, select.

```
choquer, to shock.
   chose, la, thing.
     bien des choses de ma part, my
        kind regards.
   chou, le, § 12, IV., cabbage.
   chou-fleur, le, § 14, a, cauliflower.
   -ci, § 33.
   ciel, le, § 12, IV., c, heaven.
   cinq, five.
   circonstance, la, circumstance.
   citer, to cite, quote.
   clef, la, key.
     prendre la clef des champs, to
        make off.
  clore, § 11, i, to close.
cour, le, heart.
coiffeur, le, hair-dresser.
   coin, le, corner wedge, mark.
  colère, la, anger
  combien, § 37, c, how much, how
        many.
     combien de temps, how long.
  comme, § 37. d, as, like.
comme il faut, properly.
   comment, § 37, d, how.
   commettre, to commit.
   commission, la, errand.
   compagnon, m.,
                        compagne, f.,
        companion.
   complaisance, la, kindness.
   complice, le or la, accomplice.
   compote, la, aux ..., stewed ...
   comprendre, § 11, g, to understand.
  compte, le, account, bill, reckoning.
  compter, to count, to reckon, num-
  ber, rely, expect, p. 96. comte, le, count, earl.
     (conte, le, tale; compte, le,
       account.)
  concevoir, to conceive, p. 120.
  conclure, § 11, g, to conclude,
        . 147.
  condisciple, le, fellow-student.
conduire, § 11, b, to conduct, lead.
     se conduire, § 11, b, to behave,
        p. 134.
  conduite, la, conduct, behaviour.
  confiance, la, confidence, trust.
    (confidence, la, secrety.)
confler, to trust, confide.

pp. 91, 146.

crosse, la, crosier, bat, buttend, etc.
```

confondre, to confound. connaître, § II, f, to know. connaître and savoir compared, pp. 123, 144. conquerant, le, conqueror. conquerir, § 9, c, to conquer, conquete, la, capture, taking. conseil, le, council, counsel, advice. conseiller, to advise. conserver, to keep, preserve. consommer, to consume. construire, § 11, b, to construct, build, p. 134. contenir, § 9, b, to contain. contenu, le, contents. continuellement, continually. contraindre, § 11, a, to compel. contraire, au, on the contrary. contrarier to counteract, thwart, vex, etc. contre-amiral, le, plur., § 14, c. contre-cœur, à, reluctantly, grudgingly. contredire, § 11, f, to contradict. convainere, § 11, c, to convince. convenir, § 9, b, to agree, suit. copier, to copy. coq, le, cock. corriger to correct. corne, la, horn. coucher, se, to go to bed, to set (intr.) coudre, § 11, h, to sew. coup, le, blow. a coup sur, surely. couper, to cut. courant d'air le, draught. courir, § 9, c, to run, p. 119. couronner, to crown. couter, to cost. couture, la, seam ; à plate ...., completely, utterty. couvrir, § 9, b, to cover, p. 116. craindre, § 1 a crainte, la, fear. a, to fear, p. 132. de crainte de, for fear of. crevette, la, shrimp. cri, le, cry. crier, to cry. croire, & II, f, to believe, to think, croître, § 11, f, to grow, p. 144. cueillir, § 9, b, to gather, p. 116. cuire, § 11, b, to cook, p. 134. cuisinier, le, cook. cure-dents, le, § 13, toothpick. curiosité, la, curiosity, inquisitiveness, show.

D.

dame, la, lady, dame. dangereux, -se, dangerous, critical. davantage, § 38, more (used absolutely). de, § 12, of, from, at, with, pp. 97, 154; in Comp. Nouns, § 13, débattre, to discuss.  $[(1), \bar{\beta}.$ décerner, to award. décevoir, § 10, a, to deceive, disappoint, p. 120. déchoir, § 10, c, to decay, p. 130. décimètre,  $le = \frac{1}{10}$  mètre. découvrir, § 9, a, to discover. décrire, § 11, b, to describe. décroître, § 11, a, to decrease. dedans, dehors, § 37, a. défendeur, le, § 16, g (4). défendre, to defend, forbid, prohibit. défilé, le, defile, mountain pass. dégainer (from de and gaîne), to unsheath, to draw. déjà, § 37, b, already. demain, § 37, b, to-morrow. demander, to ask, to demand, p. 78. demandeur, le, § 16, g. demeurer, to stay, to live, in the sense of to reside, dwell. demi, § 21, half, p. 160. dent, la, tooth. dép**a**rt, le, departure, starting. se dépêcher, to make haste, to hurry. dépense, la, expense, score, outlay. depenser, to spend (money). (to spend time = passer.) déplaire, § 11, to displease. depuis, since, p. 84. dernier, last, latter. derrière, § 37, a. des, § 12, of the, some, any, p. 154. descendre, p. 13, to descend, to go (come) down (stairs, etc.)

désirer, to desire, p. 96. désir, le, desire, wish. des que, as soon as, p. 85. dessein, le, design, plan. desservir, to serve a bad turn. dessin, le, design, drawing. dessiner, to draw. dessus, dessous, § 37, a. détail, le, plur. of, § 12, IV., c. détester, se, to hate one another. détour, le, turn. détruire, § 11, b, to destroy. deux, two. devant, § 37, a, p. 94. devenir, to become, p. 117. deviner, to guess, divine. devoir, le, duty, task, lesson. devoirs, les, m., task, lesson. devoir, § 10, a, to owe, p. 96 (1). dévorant, ravenous. dictionnaire, le, dictionary. difficile, difficult, hard. digue, la, dyke, embankment. dîner, le, dinner. dire, § 11, d, to say, tell, p. 136. diriger, se, to turn towards. disconvenir (de), to deny, disown. disparaître, § 11, a, to disappear. dissolvant, le, solvent. domestique, m. and f., servant. dommage, le, damage. quel (e'est) dommage, what (it is) a pity. done, p. 78, then, therefore. (then, referring to time=alors.) donner, to give, to bestow, p. 8. dont, § 35, whose. dorade, la, goldfish. doré, gilt. dormir, § 9, a, to sleep, p. 115. douter, to doubt, to question, p. 91. se douter de, to suspect, p. 110. Douvres, Dover. doux, douce, sweet, gentle, p. 52. douzaine, la, dozen. douse, twelve. du, § 12, of the, from the, some, any, p. 154, dh., prom the, dh., P. P. of devoir. -duire, Verbs in, § 11, b. dureté, la, hardness.

E.

eau, l', f., water. écaille, f., scale. écarter, s', to deviate. échecs, m. plur., chess; échec, check. échouer, to run aground, fig. to fail. échu, P.P. of échoir, § 10, c. éclair, m., lightning. éclairer, to lighten, § 7. éclore, § 11, i, to blow, to hatch. école, f., school. écolier, m., schoolboy. économe, economical, saving. écorce, f., bark. écossais, Scotch. écouter, to listen (to), p. 78. écrire, § 11, b, to write. effet, m., effect. en effet, truly, indeed. égal, equal, like. egard, m., regard. egarer, to mislay. egarer, s', to go astray, to miss one's way. eh bien! well then! eleve, m. and f., pupil, élevé, bred, brought up. élire, § 11, g, to elect. elle, eux, §§ 25-31. embaumer, to embalm. embellir, to embellish. embrasser, s', to embrace. émerveiller, s', to be astounded. emmener, to take away. (amener, to bring.) s'emparer de, to seize, take possession of. empêcher, to prevent. employer, to employ, to use. emporter, to carry off. emprunter, to borrow. en, prepos., in; in Comp. Nouns, § 13 (4). en, pronoun, §§ 25-28. s'en aller, § 8. enchanté, enchanted, delighted. enchanteur, f. enchanteresse, § 16, encore, § 37, b, yet, still. ĺg. encore un, another. endoctriner, to school.

enfin, at last. enfreindre, § 11, c, to infringe. enfuir, s', § 9, a, to run away. ennemi, m., enemy; adj., kostile. ennuyer, to weary, bore. s'ennuyer, to feel weary. ennuyeux, -se, wearisome, tiresome. (ennuyant, annoying.) enragé, mad, enraged. s'enrhumer, to catch a cold. s'enrichir, to get rick. enseigner, to teach, p. 104. ensemble, together. entendre, to hear, understand, p.96. entendre dire, to hear, to be told. entier, whole. entorse, f., sprain. entrailles, les, £, bowels, entrails. entre, *between*. s'entre-déchirer, to be at dagger drawn. entreprendre, § 11, g, to undertake. entrer, to enter, to go (come) in, p.78. entretenir, to maintain. s'entretenir, de, ta converse, talk about. onvors, towards (feeling -). (Vers, towards, direction envie, f., envy, longing. avoir envie, to have a mind. environ, prep., about. envoyer, § 8, to send. [p. 113. envoyer chercher, to send for, épais, -se, *thick*, p. 52. épouvantail, m., plur., § 12, IV., c. équivaloir, to be equal (equivalent) erreur, f., error, mistake. [40. espérer, § 3, to hope, p. 96. esprit, m., spirit, mind, opinion. essayer, § 3, e, to try essuie-mains, m., § 14\*, towel. estime, f., esteem. estomac (e silent), m., stomach. étang, m., pond. Etats-Unis, les, m., United States. été, m., summer. éteindre, § 11, a, to extinguish, p. 132. etendard, m., standard. étoffe, fi, stuff.

enfermer, to shut (lock) up.

étrange, strange, peculiar. foreign, étranger, stranger, foreigner. être, to be, pp. 6, 105. a'étonner, to be astonished, p. 110. étude, f., study, lawyer's office. eventail, l', m., plur. of, § 12, IV., c. éviter, to avoid. examen, m., examination. excepté, except(ed), save. exemplaire, m., copy (of a book, etc.) exercice, m., exercise. exiger, to require. expliquer, to explain. exprès, expresse, p. 52. exprimer, to express. extraire, § 11, f., to extrack

#### F.

face, la, front, face. se facher (de), to get angry (at). fâché contre, *angry with*. fâché de, sorry for. facile, easy. façon, la, manner, fashion. façons, les, f., ceremony. faillir, § 9, a, to fail, p. 116. faim, la, hunger. avoir faim, to be hungry. fainéant, le, idler. faire, § 11, d, to do, to make, p. 137. il fait, impers., § 7. fait, le, fact. prendre fait et cause pour, to espouse the cause of. falloir, § 10, b, must, to be necessary, to want, pp. 93, 127-130. fat, le, fop. fatigue, tired, weary. faut, § 10, a, must (see falloir). fauteuil, le, easy chair. faux, fausse, p. 52. favori, favorite, § 16. feindre, § 11, a, *to feign*, p. 133, fendre, to cleave. fenêtre, la, window. fermer, to shut, lock, close. fermier, le, farmer. fou, le, fire.

fevrier, m., F. bruary.

fier, se, to trust. flèvre, la, fever. figure, la, figure, face. fille, la, daughter, girl. fils, le, son. fin, la, end. finir, to finish, p. 15. fixement, fixedly. flagorneur, le, toady, toad-eater. flairer, to scent, to smell. flâneur, le, lounger, stroller, idler. se flatter, p. 110. flatteur, le, flatterer. fleurir, § 3, to blossom. flottant, waving. fois, la, § 23, time(s). fondre, to melt. fondre sur, to rush (pounce) upon. a force de, by dint of forêt, la, forest, wood. forger, to forge. forgeron, le, blacksmith. fort, adj., strong, solid. fort, adv., very, very much. fouetter (from fouet), to whip, flag. foule, la, crowd. fourmi, la, ant. foyer, le, hearth, fig. home. frais, fraîche, § 16, fresh. franc, franche, § 16. franc, le, French coin; 5 francs= 4 shillings. français, -e, French. franchise, la, frankness, candon. frapper, to strike. frire, § 11, i, to fry, p. 149. froid, cold, frigid. fromage, le, cheese. front, le, forehead. fuir, § 9, b, to flee. fusil, le, gun.

G.

gagner, to gain, win, carn.
gargon, le, boy, waiter, backelor.
garde, le, § 14, keeper.
gare, la, railway-stains forminus\
garnison, la, garrison.
gaulois, le, Gaulgason, le, turf.

ici, *here*.

île, f., island.

geler, § 7, to freeze.
geler à pierre fendre, to freeze [hard. genou, le, knee, § 12, 1V. genre, le, gender, kind, style. gens, les, f., people, folks. gentil, -le, p. 52. gésir, § 9, c, to lie, p. 119. glace, la, ice. glauque, sea-green. geuvernail, le, plur. of, § 12, 1v., c. grâce, la, grace, gracefulness, favour, mercy, etc. grâces, thanks. les bonnes grâces, favour, good-[will. grammaire, la, grammar. grand, great, large, big, tall, grand. grandeur, la, greatness, size. gras, grasse, fat, p. 52. gré, m., bon gré, thanks, good will. gree, f. greeque, § 16, d, Obs. grêler, § 7, to hail. grimper, to climb. grommeler, to grumble. gronder, to scold. guère, ne, hardly, scarcely, p. 15. guerre, la, war. guise, la, own way, fancy.

habit, l', m., coat. habitant, l', m., inhabitant. habiter, to inhabit. 'haïr, § 3, to hate, p. 110. se haïr, p. 21. haleine, l', f., breath. 'haut, 'hauteur, high, height, p. 159. haut, adj. & adv., high, loud, aloud. hectare, un=100 ares=21/2 acres. hériter, to inherit. 'héros, le, *hero*. hésiter, to hesitate. heure, l', f., hour, p. 160. de bonne heure, early. à la bonne heure! that's right! well and good! heureux, happy. hibou, le, owl, § 12, IV. hier, yesterday.
hirondelle, l', f., swallow.
histoire, l', f., story, history. hiver, l', m., winter.

homme, l', m., man. honorer, § 5, to honour. 'honte, la, shame, disgrace. (avoir honte, to be ashamed.) honteux, -se, shameful, disgraceful. huile, l', f., oil. huit, eight. huit jours, a week, p. 160. humide, damp.

I. il, impers., § 7; il and ce, pp. 65,

il y a, there is, § 7, b, p. 84.

imaginer, 5', to imagine, fancy.

importe, il, § 7, b, it is important.

n'importe, no matter. improviste, à l', unawares, unexinattendu, unexpected. [inconsiderate. [pectedly. indigene, adj., indigenous, native; subst. plur., aborigines. indiquer, to indicate. ingrat, ungrateful. inscrire, § 11, b, to inscribe. institutrice (f. of instituteur). governess. instruire, § 11, b, to instruct. intéresser, s', to interest one's self. interrompre, to interrupt. introduire, § 11, b, to introdu e.

jacinthe, la, hyacinth. jamais, ever; à jamais, for ever; ne jamais, never, p. 15. jambe, la, leg. jardin, le, *garden*. jeter, § 3, *to throw, to cast*. jeu, le, *play, game.* jeune, young. joindre, § 11, a, to join. oli, pretty, nice. jouer de, to play (an instrument). jouer à, to play at (a game). joujou, le, plaything, § 12, IV. jour, le, day, daylight. journal, le, journal, newspaper. journée, la, day, day's work, etc. juste, just, right, narrow.

itre, le = 1,000 mètres.

L.

2, the. rs. pron., §§ 25-30, pp. 152, , yonder. [165. , to allow, let, leave, p. 96. , milk. , la, lettuce. [talking. le, language, way of le, rabbit. ie, la, Lapland. la, tear. sse, tired, p. 52. se, § 6, to wash one's self. § 12, pp. 152, 165. pers. pron., §§ 25-29. la, lesson.
), la, reading , § 34, b, which? relat. pron., § 35. la, letter. ers. pron., §§ 25-30. eurs, poss. pron., § 32. so, to get up, rise. la, lip. la, line. 11, g, to read, p. 147. bed. lement, literally. la, pound, f. le, book. to deliver. a, lodge, box (theatre). 27. n, le, distance. le, leisure. 8, London. 16, d, Obs., long, p. 159. ng de, along. mps, a long time, long. ur, la, length. e, when, p. 85. to hire. to praise. le, rent. rs. pron., §§ 25-31, p. 165. 11, b, to shine, p. 134.

1., Monday.

Madame, Mesdames, Mrs., p. 152. mademoiselle, pl. mesdemoiselles, miss, pp. 78, 152. mail, le, plur. of, § 12, IV., c. main, la, hand, quire of paper. maint, -e, many. maintenant, now. mais, but, however; interj., why! maison, la, house. à la maison, at home. maître, m., master; f. maîtresse. mal, §§ 18, 38, badly, ill. avoir mal à..., p. 165. pas mal, not amiss. malade, ill, sick, malheur, le, misfortune. malheureux, unhappy. malin, maligne, § 16. manger, to eat. manière, la, manner, way. de manière que, p. 94. manque, le, want. manquer, to miss. manquer à, to fail in. manquer de, to fail, to be wanting maquignon, le, horse-jockey, jobber. marche, le, market, bargain. (à) bon marché, cheap. marcher, to march, walk, tread. marée, la, tide. marmot, le, brat. matin, le; matinée, la, forencon, morning. de grand (bon) matin, very early. maudire, § II, d, to curse. mauvais, § 18, bad. me, §§ 25-29. cian. médecin, m., medical man, physimédire, § 11, f., to speak il. meilleur, §§ 16, g, 18, 11., better. mêler to mix, mingle. se mêler de, to meddle with. meme, adj., § 36, a, same, self; adv., even, very. mener, § 3, to lead. mentir, § 9, a, to lie, to tell a falsehood, p. 115. menton, le, chin.

mer, la, sea. merci, la, grace.

0

à merveille, capitally. mésaventure, la, mishap. [p. 142. mesure, la, measure. mettre, § II, e, to put, place, mettre à la voile, to set sail. mi-juillet, la, middle of July. midi, m., mid-day, twelve o'clock, noon, south, p. 160. mien, le, § 32, II. mieux, § 38, better le mieux, best. mignon, -ne, pretty nice. mince, thin. mine, la, mien, face. minuit, f., midnight, twelve o'clock in the night, p. 160. moi, §§ 30, 31. moindre, § 18, 11., and 38, least. moins, § 18, 37, c, and 38, less.
pas le moins du monde, not in the least. moins . . . moins, p. 158. mois, le, month. mon, ma, mes, § 32, I. monde, le, world, people, company. tout le monde, everybody. monsieur, plur. messieurs, Mr., sir, gentleman, pp. 78, 152. montagnard, le, highlander. montagne, la, mountain. monter, to mount, to ascend, to go upstairs. monter à cheval, to ride. montre, la, watch. montrer, to show, to display. de, se, to laugh at, to moquer make fun of. mort, P. P. of mourir, to die. mort, la, death. mot, le, word.

bon mot, witticism, witty saying.

motrice (f. of moteur), adj., motive.

mou, mol, molle, § 16, f, soft.

mourir, § 9, c, to die, p. 119.

moudre, § 11, h, to grind. moulin, le, mill.

moutarde, la, mustard.

merci, m., thanks, mercure, le, mercury, quicksilver.

méridional, southern. merveille, la, marvel.

mouvoir, § 10, b, to move. muet, -te, mute, dumb, p. 52. mugissement, le, roaring.

mar, ripe, mature. nager, to swim. naître, § II, f, to be born, to rise. ne . . . pas (point, plus, pas m plus, guère, jamais, ris personne), p. 15. ne . . . que, only, p. 15. néanmoins, nevertheless, notait standing. nécessaire, necessary. négligent, careless. negliger, to neglect. négociant, le, merchant. neige, la, snow. il neige, § 7, it snows. net, nette, clear, neat, p. 52. nez, le, nose. avoir bon nez, to be far sight nier, to deny, p. 96. noir, black.
nom, le, name, noun.
nombre, le, number. nombre d'années, many year. non, no (adv.). nord, le, north. notre, nos, § 32, I., our. le (la) nôtre, les nôtres, § 32, 1 nous, pers. pron., §§ 25-31. nouveau, nouvelle, § 16, f. nouvelle, la, nerus. avoir (recevoir) des nouvelles to hear from. nuire (a), § 11, b, to hurt, p. nuit, la, night. nul, nulle, pp. 52, 72.

obéir à, to obey, p. 78. obéissance, f., obedience. obligeance, f., kindness. s'obstiner à, to persist in. obtenir, § 9, b, to obtain.
occasion, l', f., opportunity.
occuper de, s', to attend to ploy (busy, apply) one :

§ 12, IV., c. , egg. b, to offer. 1, b, to anoint. m., bird. ), shadow, shade. , one. a., uncle. gold. ordinairement, ď, :lly, commonly, usually. to order. n., order. f., ear. , native. re, venture, p. 96. d, 37, a, where, p. 86. hence. which way?

forget.
n., west.
81.
b, to hear.
h, bear.
P. of ouvrir, to open.
ouvert, candidly.
h, to open, p. 116.

#### P.

bread, loaf. II, f, to graze, feed. reace. 13, IV., c, stake. palace. trough, out of, p. 99. tro, in compensation. par là, § 37, a. which way? § 11, f., to appear, p. 145. , le, § 14, umbrella. , because. , § 9, b, to run through, e, travel (gv) over. rà, to forgive, p. 78. e, such, like, similar. les, m., parents, relations. E, idle, lasy. dv., sometimes, at times. speak, p. 14.

parmi, among(st). part, la, share, allowance, portion. faire part de, to inform of, to communicate. bien des choses de ma part à..., my kind regards to... parti, le, party, resolution. prendre le parti de, to take the side of. partie, la, part, match (of a game). partir, § 9, a, to start, to set out, to go off, p. 115. parvenir à, § 9, b, to succeed in. pas, le, step, pace, stride, footprint. passé, past, last, all over. passer, to pass, spend. passer ches, to call on. se passer, to happen. se passer de, to do without. patiner, to skate. patrie, la, native country, fatherland. pauvre, poor, indigent. payer, to pay. pays, le, country. Pays Bas, les, Netherlands. peau, la, skin, hide. pêche, la, peach; fishing. pécheur, le, § 16, b, sinner. peindre, § 11, d, to paint. peine, la, trouble, difficulty. à peine, hardly, scarcely. pendant, during, pending. pendant que, while, whilst. penser (a), to think (of), p. 96. perdre, to lose, to ruin. père, le, father. permettre, § 11, g, to allow, permit. perroquet, le, parrot. personne, la, person. personne ne, m., nobody, pp. 15, 72 perte, la, loss, ruin courir à perte d'haleine, to run out of breath. petit, § 18, little, small, tiny, short. peu, §§ 37, c, 38, adv., little, few. scanty. pour, la, fear, fright, dread. avoir pour, to be afraid. do pour que ... no, lest, p. 9%

pied, le, foot, footing. à pied, on foot. pierre, la, stone. pire, le pire, § 18, II., adj., worse, worst. pis, le pis, § 38, adv., worse, worst. pitié, la, pity. placer, § 3, to place. plaindre, § 11, a, to pity, p. 133. se plaindre (de), to complain of, p. 133. plainte, la, complaint. plaire a, § 11, g, to please, p. 147. se plaire à, to take pleasure in. plaisir, le, pleasure. planche, la, board, plank. faire la planche, to float. plat, flat, dull. plein, full, replete. pleuvoir, §§ 7, 10, b, to rain. ployer, § 3, to fold. pluie, la, rain. plume, la, feather, pen. plus (de), §§ 18, 37, c, more. plus ... ne, no more, no longer, p. plus ... plus, p. 158. [15. plus tôt, sooner, earlier. plusieurs, § 36, b, several. plutôt, rather. poche, la, pocket. poindre, § 11, b, to dawn. point, le, point, dot, stitch, mark. pointe, la, point, sharp end, tag, poire, la, pear. [peak. poitrail, le, plur. of, § 12, IV., c. [peak. poivre, le, pepper. pomme, la, apple. pomme de terre, potatoe. pommette, la, cheek bone. pondu (frais -), new laid. pore, le, pig, pork. portail, le, plur. of, § 12, IV., c. porte, la, door, gate. porte-monnaie, le, purse. porter, se, to be, to do (in health).
pouce, le, thumb, inch.
poule, la, hen. pour, with Infinit., for, p. 99. pourquoi, why. poursuivre, § 11, g, to pursue. pourvoir, § 10, b, to provide.

pourvu que, provided, p. 94. pousser, to push, thrust, utter. pousser jusqu'au bout, te through with. pouvoir, § 10, b, to be able, 96, 123 se pouvoir, to be possible. prédire, § 11, d, to predict. premier, le, first. prendre, § 11, d, to take. préparer, to prepare. présent, à, now, at present. presque, almost, nearly. pressé, in a hurry, eager. prêt (à), ready. prétendre, to pretend, mean. prêter, to lend. preuve, la, proof. prévaloir, § 10, a, to prevail. prevenant, engaging. prévenir, to inform, forewa forestall, be beforehand w prevent. prévenu, le, prisoner. prévoir, to foresee. prier, § 3, f, to pray, beg, t invite. prier de, *to ask*. printemps, le, spring. pris, P. P. of prendre, to take. prise, la, capture, taking. prix, le, price, prize. probablement, probably. procede, le, proceeding, procede behaviour le manque de -, want of court produire, § 11, b, to produce. profit, le, profit.
mettre à -, to turn to account profond, deep, profound. promener, se, to talk a walk. promesse, la, the promise. promettre, to promise. propos, le, subject, matter, course, talk. proposition, la, proposal, prop tion. puisque, since, as. punix, to punish, p. 8.
punition, le, punishment,
pupitre, le, desk.

en. : for, as regards.

§ 21, quarter, fourth, qui! quoi! § 34. p. 167. i comparative, than. aussi, as. and, p. 86. s, indef. pr., § 35, a. ıdef. pr., § 36, a. some. , § 36, c, some one (body). , c, to fetch. tail. juoi, relat. pron., § 35. soit, § 36, c. , § 36, c, whosoever. ), the fifth. teen. ours, a fortnight, p. 160. quit, to leave. ū? ith Subj., although, p 94. § 36, c, whatever.

## **B.** to relate, tell.

reason, right.
ison, to be right.
ent, le, argument.
o bring back.
, to remind.
len, to recollect.
), bearing, profit, report,
', relation.
s, to be disheartened.
§ 2, and 10, a, to receive,
).
(9, § 11, a, to r.cognise,
|§ 9, a, to gather.
1, d, to repeat.
11, b, to reduce.
'o refect, to bethink one's

grape (la grappe, bunch).

to reform, correct.
refuse, deny; - la porte,
rome's self.

régal, le, § 12, 1v., c, treat. regarder, to look (at), concern, p.78. rejoindre, to join, rejoin, overtake, p. 132. réjouir, se (de), to rejoice (at). relier, to bind (books). relieur, le, bookbinder. remercier, to thank. remettre, to deliver, to hand, fut off. remplir, to fill, fulfil. remporter, to carry. renard, le, fox.
rencontre, la, meeting, encounter. rencontrer (se), to meet, to come across, p. 78. rendre, to return (transit.), to give back, render, make.
rentes, les, f., income, funds, stocks, annuity. rentrer, to enter again, to return home. repentir, se, § 9, a, to repent, rue, p. 115. répéter, to repeat. repondre (a), to reply, to answer; en -, to warrant. répense, la, reply, answer. repos, le, repose, rest. laisser en repos, to let alone. reprendre, to reply. resoudre, § 11, h, to resolve, p. 148. rester, to stay, to remain, to be left. restreindre, § 11, a, to restrict. retard, le, delay. retard, en, late, behindhand. retarder, to delay. retenir, § 9, b, to detain, secure, hold back, withhold. retirer, se, to withdraw, retire. retour, de, back again. retourner, to return. retranché, entrenched. retreuver, to find again. reussir, to succeed. réussite, la, success. revaloir, § 10, a, to pay out. revanche, en, in compensation. reveille-matin, le, § 14, d, alarum reveiller, to wake, awaken. revenant, le, ghost. revenir, to come back.

revenir &, to come (amount) to, cost. revêtir, § 9, b, to invest. revoir, § 10, b, to see again. au revoir! till I see you again! révoltant, shocking. rien, ne, nothing, pp. 15, 72. rire, § 11, f., to laugh, p. 136. rivage, le, bank, shore, beach. rive, la, bank, shore, riverside. rivière, la, river, stream. riz, le, rice. roi, le, king. Romain, Koman. rompre, to break, snap, sever. rond, round. rouge, red. route, la, road, way, route. roux, rousse, red (hair, etc.), p. 52. rue, la, strect.

8.

sable, le, sand.

sage, wise, good (as to conduct). sagesse, la, wisdom. saillie, faire, to stand out. saillir, to project. salé, adj., salt(ed). salir, to soil, to stain, to dirty. sans, with Infinit., without, but for, p. 99 santé, la, *health.* satisfaire, § 11, f, to satisfy. sauter, to jump, spring, burst. sauver, to save, rescue. se sauver, to run away, to be off. savant, adj., learned; substant., scholar. savoir, § 10, b, to know (how), p.96. savoir-vivre, le, good breeding. savoir, pouvoir, and connaître. o. 123. schelling, le, shilling. scrupuleusement, conscientiously. sec, sèche, § 16, dry, arid. séduire, § 11, b, to seduce. sel, le, salt. selon, according to. semblant, faire, to feign, pretend. sembler, to seem. **8608**, le, sense, opinion, direction.

sentier, le, footpath. sentir, § 9, a, to feel, to m pp. 96, 115. seoir, § 10, d, to be fitting. sept, seven. sérioux, -so, *serious, grave*. servante, la, maid-servant. servir, § 9, a, to serve, p. 115. servir a, to be good for. soul, alone, only, sole. soulement, only. si, adv., so; in answer to a re tive question, yes, p. 81. si, conj., if, whether, p. 88. sien, le, § 32, 11. singe, le, monkey, ape. société, la, society, company. sœur, la, sister. soif, la, thirst. soir, le, evening. soirée, la, evening's duration, pa soldat, le, soldier. soleil, le, sun. sombre, dark, dusky. son, sa, ses, § 32, I. songer à, to dream, to think sf. sonner, to ring, to ring for, to str sorte, la, sort, kind. sortir, to go out, pp. 13, 115. sot, sotte, foolish, p. 52. sou (10 of a franc), halfpenny. souffle, le, breath. souffrir, § 9, b, to suffer, to all souhait, le, wisk. souhaiter, to wish. soulagé, relieved. soupe, la, soup. souper, le, supper. source, la, source. sourdre, § 11, i, to rise (water). sourire, § II, c, to smile. sous, under. souscrire, § 11, b, to subscribe. sous-officier, le, plur. of, § 14, soustraire, § 11, c, to abstract. souvenir, se, to remember, p. Il souvent, often. soyeux, silky. spectacle, le, sight. Suffire, § 11, d, to suffice.
| Buisso, la, Switzerland.

suite, la, the continuation, retinut.
tout de suite, instantly.
suite, de, without intermission.
suivant, following, next.
suivre, § 11, c, to follow, p. 135.
sujet, le, subject, cause, p. 52.
sur, on, upon.
sûr, sure, certain, safe.
surmonter, to overcome.
surseoir, § 10, d, to suspend.

#### T.

tableau, le, picture, painting, black-board, list, scene. tache, la, task, job. tache, la, spot, stain. tailleur, le, tailor. taire, se, § 11, g, to be silent, p. 147. tant (de), § 37, c, so much, so many. tante, la, aunt. tapis, le, carpet, rug. de table, table-cover. tard, late. tarder à, to be long (in). tarder de (impers.), to long to. tasse, la, cup. taupe, la, *mole*. te, §§ 25-30. teindre, § 11, a, to dye, tinge, stain. tel, § 36, b, such; un tel, such a. temps, le, time, weather, tense. tenir, § 9, c, to hold, keep. se tenir, to keep, to behave, p. 118. terrain, le, ground. terre, la, earth, ground, land, estate. tête, la, head. the, le, tea. thème, le, exercise, theme. tien, le, § 32, 11. tiers, tierce, § 21, third, p. 52. timbre-poste, le, § 14, a, postagestamp. tirer, to draw, pull, fire. toi, §§ 30, 31. tomber, to fall, tumble.
tomber d'accord, to agree.

ton, ta, tes, § 32, I. ton, le, tone, sound. le bon ton, good manners. tonner to thunder. tonnerre, le, thunder. tort, le, wrong. avoir tort, to be wrong. à tort et à travers, ai random. tôt, *early*, soon. toucher, to touch, feel, concern. toujours, always, still, ever. tour, la, tower; castle (at chess). tour, le, turn, circumference, stroll. tourmenter, to torment. tout, -e (plur. tous, toutes), § 36, b, all, every, whole. tout, adv., quite, altogether. du tout, at all. tout à l'heure, just now, by-andtracer, to trace. [by. traduction, la, translation. traduire, § 11, b, totranslate, p. 133. traire, § 11, c, to milk, p. 135. traiter, to treat. tranquille, tranquil, quiet. travail, § 12, IV., c, work, labour. travailler, to work, to labour. traverser, to cross, go through, thwart. treize, thirteen. trembler, to tremble, quake, fear. très, very; before a Past Part. very triple, § 22. much. tromper, to deceive. tromper, se, to be mistaken (deceived). trop (de), §§ 12, b, 37, c, too, too much. troupe, f., troop, gang, band. trouver, to find. se trouver, to be, to happen to be. trouver bon, to approve. trouver mauvais, to disapprove, to find fault. tuer, to kill, to destroy.

T.

un, une, § 4, a, an. uni, even, smooth. utile, susfel, serviceable.

tutoyer, to thee and thou.

٧.

vaincre, § 11, c, to conquer, p. 135. vainqueur, le, victor, conqueror. valoir, § 10, b, to be worthy, p. 130. vécu, P. P. of vivre, lived. vendeur, le, § 16, g. vendre, to sell, p. 9. vengeur, vengeresse, § 16, g (4). venir, § 9, c, to come, pp. 96, verger, le, orchard. [117. verité, la, truth. verbe, le, verb; theol., word. verre, le, glass. version, translation (from a foreign language into the vernacular). vêtir, se, § 9, b, to clothe, p. 116. vide, empty, void. vie, la, life, livelihood. vicillesse, la, old age. vicux, vicille, § 16, f, old. village, le, village. ville, la, town, city.

vite, adj. and adv., § 34, quick, quickly. vivre, § 11, g, to live, to exist, to be alive, p. 148.

vin, le, wine.

les vivres, m., victuals, provisions. yeux, pl. of ceil, § 12, 1v., eyes-

voici, here is, here are. me voisi, kere I am, etc. voils, there is, there are. voils comme, that is how. le voilà, there he is. voile, le, veil. voile, la, sail. voir, § 10, c, to see, pp. 96, 130. voiture, la, coach, carriage. aller en voiture, to go for a drist.

voix, la, voice, vote. voler, to steal, fly. volonté, la, will, wish. volontiers, willingly, with pleasure. votre, vos, § 32, I. le (la) vôtre, les vôtres, § 32, IL voyage, le, travel, journey. voyager, to travel. voyageur, le, traveller. vouloir, § 10, b, to want, to be willing, pp. 96, 125-126. vous, pers. pron., §§ 25-31. vrai, true, real, right, downright. vraiment, truly, indeed, p. 80. vue, la (from P. P. of voir), sight.

y, §§ 25-28, there, thither, to il.

# II.—ENGLISH-FRENCH VOCABULARY.

A.

E

E

a (an), un, f. une, § 12, III. able, to be, pouvoir, pp. 124-5. about, to be, pp. 114, 171. above, en haut, p. 171. absence, l'absence, f. abstain (from), to, s'abstemir (de). accepter, to, accepter. accident, l'accident, m. accompany, to, accompagner. accustom, to, accoutumer à. to get accustomed, see p. 141. acquainted (with), to be, connaître. acquire, to, acquerir, § 9, c. acquit, to, absoudre, § 11, h, acquitter. act, to, agir. action, l'action, f. active, actif. **acute**, *aigu*, § 15, Obs. 1. address, to, adresser la parole à. admiral, l'amiral, m. admire, to, admirer. advance, to, avancer. advice, le conseil, l'avis, m. to advise, conseiller. affair, l'affaire, f. afraid, to be, pp. 132-3. Africa, l'Afrique, f. after, prep., après, p. 171. after, conj., après que, p. 85. afternoon, après-midi, f. or m. again, de nouveau, encore une fois; not . . . again, ne . . . plus; with Verbs, generally re-, as, to see again, revoir, rouvrir. against, contre, envers. age, l'âge, m. **250**, see p. 84.

agree, to (= to admit), convenir (de), p. 117; (= to come to terms), s'accorder, convenir (de). agrecable, agréable; see also p. 126. ail, to, avoir (personal). all, tout (-e), (plur. tous, toutes). allied, *allié* (-e). allow, to, permettre, laisser. almost, presque. alone, *seul*. Alps, les Alpes, f. already, dejà. also, aussi. although, quoique, with Subj. always, toujours America, l'Amérique, f. among, parmi, ches. amuse one's self, to, s'amuser (a). ancient, *ancien* (-ne). and, *et*. angry (with), fâché, en colère (contre) angry (with), to get, se facher (contre). Ann, Anne. announce, to, annoncer. annoy, to, ennuyer, vexer. another, § 36. answer, to, répondre (à), répliquer à, correspondre, p. 155. anxious (to), to be, avoir envie (de), unir à, tenir à cœur de. any, § 36. anything, § 36. appease, to, apaiser, pacifier, concilier. apple, la pomme. approach, to, (s')approcher (de). approve, to approver trewver bon-April, avril, m. arena, l'arène, f. Ð

banker, le banquier.

bathe, to, *se baigner*. battle, *la bataille*.

banner, la bannière, le drapeau.

be, te, être, pp. 6-7; (in health), a

arm, the, lebras, (=weapen) l'arme, with to armer de. [f. arm with, to, armer de. army, l'arma, f. arrive, to, arriver. art, l'art, m. as, comme after comparisons, que. as for -, quant à as much, autant (de). as soon as, aussitôt que, des que. ashamed, to be, avoir honte (de). Asia, l'Asie, f. ask (for), to, demander, p. 78 (with dative of person). asleep, to be, dormir, être endormi. assail, to, assaillir, § 9; attaquer. assiduously, assidûment. assurance, l'assurance, 1 assure, to, assurer. astonish, to, etonner. astray, to go, s'égarcr. at, à (place, § 31 [5], and p. 171); chez (person), § 31 (5). at all, du tout. at last, enfin. at least, au moins. at once, immédiatement ; (=at the same time), en même temps, à la fois. at the house of, ches, § 31 (5). Athens, Athènes, f. attack, to, attaquer, assaillir. attention, l'attention, f. attraction, l'attraction, f. audacity, l'audace, f. August, août (pron. =où), m. aunt, la tante. Austrian, Autrichien. author, l'auteur, m., no fem. form. autumn, l'automne, m. (f. in poetry only). avoid, to, eviter. awaken, to, réveiller, éveiller. awkward, gauche, maladroit.

B.

bad, mauvais, michant. badly, mal, § 38. bake, to, cuire, p. 134.

aye, oui vraiment.

porter. bear, to, porter. to bear ill will, see p. 126. bear, the, l'ours, m. beast, la bête, l'animal, m. beat, to, battre (bâtir = to build). beautiful, beau, § 6, f. because, parce que. become, to, pp. 117 and 138. bed, le lit. to go to bed, se coucher, aller a coucher. beef, le bauf. beefsteak, le bifteck. beer la bière. before, adv., avant, auparavant. before, prep., avant (time), deven (place), p. 172. before, conj., avant que, Subj., p. 94; avant de, with Infin., pp. 100-1. beg, to, demander, prier (de) (-alms), mendier. begin, to, commencer (with a or de) to begin again, recommencer. behalf of, on, en faveur de. behave, to, se conduire, se comporter behaviour, la conduite, le procéde Belgium, la Belgique. believe, to, croire. belong to, to, appartenir à, are best, adj., le meilleur; adv., mieux. better, adj., meilleur ; adv., mienz to be better, valoir mieux. between, entre. bill, le compte, la note; -of exchange la lettre de change. bind, to, lier; (books), relier. bird, l'oiseau, m. birthday, le jour (l'anniversaire) naissance. black, noir. blackberry, la mare. blame, the, le blame, see also p. se bless, to, benir, p. 19.

blossom, to, fleurir. blow, le coup. body, le corps. boil, to, bouillir (intrans.); faire bouillir (trans.). le livre; old book, le bouquin. bookbinder, le relieur. boot, la botte, la bottine. born, to be, naître, § 11, f. borrow (from), to, emprunter (de or a). botany, la botanique, [§ 36. both, (tous) les deux, l'un et l'autre, both . . . and, et . . . et. bottom, le fond. boy, le garçon. box, to, boxer. Brazils, le Brésil, bread, le pain. break, to, casser; intrans., poindre, § II; to - out, éclater, se déchainer. breakfast, the, le déjeuner. breakfast, to, déjeuner. bring, to (= to carry), apporter. bring, to (= to lead), amener. brother, le frère. brother-in-law, le beau-frère. Brussels, Bruxelles. build, to, bâtir, construire. building, le bâtiment, l'édifice, m. bun, la brioche. Burgundy, la Bourgogne, le vin de Bourgogne. burn, to, brûler. burst, to, éclater, p. 136. business, les affaires, f. but, conj., mais. p. 141. but, adv., ne . . . que; but just, butter, le beurre. buy, to, acheter, § 3\*. by, prep., par, de, p. 172. by-the-bye,à-propos, par parenthèse. by dint of, à force de.

· 0.

cake, le gâteau. call, the, ia visite. call, to, appeler, § 3.

call on, to, passer chez, aller voir, faire (une) visite. s'appeler, § 3, a. called, to be, camp, le camp. can, pouvoir, squoir, p. 124. candle, la chandelle. Cannes, Cannes. capable, capable (de). cape, le cap, le promontoire. captain, le capitaine. care, the, le soin, le souci. to care (for), tenir à, se soucier de. to take - not to, se garder de. careful, to be, avoir soin (de). careless, négligent, négligé, irréfléchi carriage, la voiture. carriage-gate, la porte-cochère. carry, to, porter; - out, exécuter. Carthage, Carthage, f. Carthaginian, le Carthaginien. cat, le chat. eatch, to, prendre, attraper, saisir. to - a cold, s'enrhumer. cattle, le bétail, les bestiaux. cause, to, p. 140. cautious, prudent. cautiously, prudemment. cavern, la caverne. cease, to, cesser. century, le siècle. certainly, certainement, assurément. chair, la chaise; (la chaire, the pulpit). Champagne, le vin de Champagne. chapter, le chapitre. charming, charmant. chatter, to, babiller. cheese, le fromage. cherish, to, cherir. cherry, la cerise. chest, la poitrine. chestnut, la châtaigne. child, le chef. child, l'enfant, m. and f. in sing.; China, la Chine. [m. in plur. choice, le choix. choose, to, choisir. Christman, Notl, f. church, l'église, f.

contradict, to, contredire, \$ 11, g. circumstance. la circonstance. clean, to, nettoyer, § 3, e. contrary, le contraire. elearly, distinctement, clairement, avec clarté. clever, habile, adroit. climb, to, grimper. close, to, clore. cloth, la toile. clothes, les habits, m., le vêtement. olumsy, maladroit, gauche. coach, la voiture. state -, le carrosse. coachman, le cocher. coat, l'habit, m. oock, le cog. coffee, le café. cold, froid, § 7, b, p. 165. to be (feel) cold, avoir froid. to catch a -, s'enrhumer. collection, la collection, le cabinet. colour, la couleur. Columbus, Colomb (pron. Colon). come, to, venir, § 9, c. [ner).come back, to, revenir (not retourcome down (stairs), to, descendre, venir en bas. come home again, to, rentrer. come in, to, entrer. comfort, to, consoler, réconforter. comfort, the, le confort, le confor-table, le bien-être, le soulagement, la consolation. comfortable, confortable, commode, à son aise, à l'aise. complain (of), to, se plaindre (de), § II, a. comrade, *le camarade*. conceited, suffisant. conceive, to, concevoir. concert, the, le concert. conduct, to, conduire, § 11, b. conduct, la conduite. confide, to, confier (a). confidence, la confiance. conquer, to, conquerir, § 9; vaincre, conscience, la conscience. [§ 11, c. consecrate, to, bénir, p. 17. consent (to), to, consentir (à), § 9, a. consider, to, réfléchir (à), considérer. construction, la construction. contain, to, contenir, § 9, b.

on the -, au contraire. contribute, to, contribuer. cook, te, cuire, § 17, b. cook, the, le cuisinier, la cuisinien. copy, to, copier. copy, the, la copie, (of a book l'exemplaire, m. copy-book, le cahier. ooral, le corail, § 12, IV., C. correct, te, corriger. correctly, correctement. correspondent, le correspondant. oost, to, collier, revenir d. oottage, la chaumière, la maiss nette. country (fields), la campagne, country (native), la patrie. country, le pays, la contrée. courage, le courage. course, the, le cours, la course. course, of, cela va sans dire. oousin, *le cousin, la cousine*. cover (with), to, couvrir (de). cow, la vache. oowherd, le pâtre, le vacher. coxcomb, le fat (t sounded). oream-tart, la tarte à la crème. oriminal, criminel (-le). oross, to, iraverser, passer, franchii croiser.

Cross, the, la croix. crow, to, chanter. crowd, la foule.
crown (with), to, couronner (de). crown, the, la couronne. Crusaders, les Croisés, m. oup, la tasse. curiosity, la curiosité. out, to, couper, tailler. to out off, trancher.

dance, to, danser. Danube, le Danube. dare, to, oser. dark, sombre, obscur. dark, to be, faire nuit (sombre), daughter, la fille.

dawn, to, poindre, § 11, i. day, le jour, la journée. day after to-morrow, après-demain. day before yesterday, avant-hier. dead, mort (P.P. of mourir). deaf, sourd. deal, a great deal, beaucoup (de). dear, cher, f. chère. death, la mort, le décès. deceitful, trompeur, § 17, g. deceive, to, tromper, dicevoir. December, décembre, m. decision, la décision. declare, to, déclarer. decline, to, refuser. decrease, to, décroître, § 11, f. deep, profond. defend, to, défendre. delay, to, différer, remettre. delay, the, le délai. delighted, enchanté, charmé, ravi. delude one's self, to, se bercer (de), se faire illusion. demolish, to, démolir. demonstration, la démonstration, dontist, le dentiste. deserve, to, mériter (de). design (drawing), le dessin. design (purpose), le dessein. desire, to, désirer, vouloir. destroy, to, détruire, § 11, b. detain, to, retenir. devastate, to, dévaster. devote (to), to, vouer, consacrer. devour, to, devorer. dial, le cadran. dictionary, le dictionnaire. Dido (queen), Didon. die, to, mourir, p. 30. difference, la différence. different, différent, autre. difficult, difficile, malaisé. difficulty, see p. 184. dine, to, diner. dint of, by, à force de. direction, la direction. disappoint, to, décevoir. discover, to, découvrir. discovery, la découverte. disorderly, mal, d'une manière déréglée.

displease, to, déplaire (d), § 11, g. disposed (to), disposé (de or à). dissolve, to, dissoudre, § 11, h. distance, le lointain, la distance, distinctly, distinctement, distinguish, to, distinguer, discerner. divide, to, diviser. do, to, faire, pp. 137-140; interrog. or neg. auxiliary, pp. 14-15; emphatic, p. 80. do, to (health), se porter, aller. doctor, le docteur dog, le chien. doll, la poupée. door, la porte. carriage door la portière. doubt, to, douter. doubt, the, le doute. down (stairs), en bas; to come (go) downstairs, descendre. dozen, la douzaine. draught, the, le courant d'air, le vent coulis. dread, to, craindre, redouter. dress, to, se mettre, s'habiller. drink, to, *boire*, § 11. drive, aller en voiture. dry, sec, § 16, d. to dry, sécher, essuyer. duchess, la duchesse. during, prep., pendant. dust, la poussière. Dutch, hollandais. duty, le devoir.

### E.

each, § 36, a.
each other, l'un l'autre, les uns
les autres, § 36, b.
early, tôl, de bonne heure.
early in the morning, de grand
matin.
earth, la terre;
why on - ? pourquoi donc . . . ?
east, l'est, m., l'orient, m.
easy, facile, aisé, commode.
eat, to, manger, § 3, §
edifice, l'édifice, m.
effort, l'effort, m.

egg, l'œuf, m. (f silent in plur.) Egypt, l'Egypte, f. eight, huit. elder, eldest, ainé (-e). election, l'élection, f. elegy, l'élégie, f. elevate, to, élever. elm, l'orme, l'ormeau, m. elsewhere, ailleurs. embankment, le quai, la digue. embellish, to, embellir. emperor, l'empereur. empty, to, vider; - itself, se jeter. enabled, to be, pouvoir, être à même de. enchanting, enchanteur, § 16, g. encourage, to, encourager. end, the, la fin, le bout. end (by), to, finir (par). enemy, l'ennemi. m. England, l'Angleterre, f. English, anglais. Englishman (woman), l'Anglais(e). engraving, la gravure. enjoy, to, jouir de. enough, assez. enter, to, entrer (dans). enterprise, l'entreprise, f. equal, égal. escape, to, Echapper. especially, surtout. estate, le domaine, la terre. esteem, to, estimer. esteem, the, l'estime, f. ove, la veille. even, adj., uni. even, adv., même. evening, le soir, la soirée. event, l'événement, m. ever, jamais. every, everything, § 36, b. everywhere, partout. evil, le mal. exactly, exactement, justement. examination, l'examen, m. example, l'exemple, m. exercise, le thème, l'exercice, m. exhibition, l'exposition, f., § 37. expect, to, attendre, s'attendre à, compter, espérer. expedition, l'expédition, f.

expenses, les dépenses, f.
expensive, cher, p. 148; dispendienz.
experience, to, éprouver, rencontrer.
explain, to, expliquer.
expose, to, exposer.
express, to, exprimer.
extraot, to, extraire, p. 135.
extravagant, extravagant.
eye, l'ail, m., pl. les yeux, § 12, IV.

fail, to, faillir, manquer (de). failure, l'insuccès, m. fair, the, la foire. fair, adj., clair, blond, beau. faith, *la foi*. faithful, fidèle. fall, to, tomber (choir, obsol.). false, faux, § 16, d. falsehood, le mensonge. family, la famille. famous, fameux. fancy, to, s'imaginer, se figurer; just –, imaginez-vous! the fancy takes me to . . . , & m'avise de . far (off), lein (de). fast, adv., vite, § 37, a (4). father, le père. fault, la faute, le défaut. favour, la faveur. favourite, favori (-te). fear, to, craindre.
fear, for, de crainte que . . . ne, p. feather, la plume. [94-February, février, m. feel, to, sentir, p. 115. fellow, le compagnon, camarade, pareil, membre, l'égal, etc., to be rendered according to the context :awkward -, maladroit. bad -, mauvais garnement. base -, misérable, un infâme. cunning -, rusé compère. fine -, beau garçon. my good -, bon enfant (garçon).

hary -, paresseux, fainéant.

mon brave!

fellow, odd (queer), drôle de corps. old -, vieux bonhomme. poor -, pauvre diable. sad -, triste sire. saucy -, effronté. stout -, gros gaillard. young -, jeune homme. fotch, to, alter chercher. to send to fetch, envoyer chercher. fover, la fièvre. few, peu (de); a few, adj., quelques; subst., quelques-uns. fewer, moins (de). field, le champ, la campagne. flerce, féroce, farouche, sauvage, furieux. fig, la figue. fight, to, combattre, se battre. fight, the, le combat. **fine**, beau, § 16, f. finger, the, le doigt. fire, the, le feu; the fireside, le coin du feu, le foyer. fire, to, faire feu, tirer, p. 139. first, le premier ; adv., d'abord, premièrement.
fish, the, le poisson.
to fish, pêcher. fit, to, aller, p. 113; convenir. flatter, to, flatter. flee, to, fuir, s'enfuir, § 9. flourishing, florissant. flower, la fleur. **fly**, la mouche. fog, le brouillard, la brume. foggy, to be, faire du brouillard. follow, to, suivre, § 11, c.
to be followed by, être suivi de. fond (of), to be, aimer (à, with Infinit.). fool, foolish, sot, fou, § 16, f. foot, footing, le pied. on foot, à pied. footpath, le sentier. for, prep., pour, p. 172; à. for, conj., car. forbid, to, défendre.

forest, la forêt. forget, to, oublier (de).

forgive, to, pardonner (a).

form, la forme, la classe. formerly, autrefois. fortnight, quinze jours, la (une) quinzaine. fortress, la forteresse. found, to, fonder. foundation, la fondation. fountain, la fontaine. Frederick, Frédéric. freeze, to, geler, § 3, a\*. frequently, frequemment, souvent, French, français. Frenchman, le Français. fresh, frais, f. fraiche, § 16, d. Friday, vendredi, m. friend, the, l'ami (-e). friendship, l'amitié, f. frivolous, frivole. from, de, des, depuis, p. 173; from, after words of taking, a, p. 134. fry, to, frire, faire frire, § 11, i. fugitive, le fugitif. fun, la plaisanterie, l'amusement, for -, pour rire. fund, le fond. funny, drôle. – fellow, un drôle de corps. future (gram.), le futur; (coming events), l'avenir, m. for the -, à l'avenir.

G.

gain, to, gagner; (watch), avancer garden, le jardin. gardener, le jardinier. gather, to, cueillir, § 9; p. 116, recueillir. gender, le genre. gentleman, monsicur, plur. messieurs; adj., comme il faut. gently, doucement, tout doux! German, allemand. Germany, l'Allemagne, f. get, to, faire, p. 140. get up, to, se lever. get angry (with), to, se facher (contre). ghost, le revenant. gist, l'essentiel, m., le fin mot, le point capital.

give back, to, rendre. happen, to, impers., arriver, glad, aise, fort (bien) aise, content. gladiator, see p. 184, v., b. glass, le verre. glove, le gant. go, to, aller, § 8, p. 113. go away, s'en aller, p. 113. go out, sortir, § 9, a, p. 115. go to bed, se coucher, aller se coucher. go up, monter.
gold, l'or, m.; adj., d'or, en or. good, bon, bonne. governess, la gouvernante. grace, la grâce, la faveur. the good graces, les bonnes grâces. grammar, la grammaire. grandfather, le grandpère. grandmother, la grand mère; mèregrand (fam.). grape, le raisin. graze, to, paître, § 11, f. Greece, la Grèce. head, la tête. Greek, grec, f. grecque, § 15. green, vert. greet, to, saluer. grieve, to, (intrans.) s'affliger; (transitive), chagriner, facher. grind, to, moudre, § 11, h. ground, le sol. on the ground, par tirre, à terre. grudge, to bear a, en vouloir (à), p. 126. grumble, grommeler. gudgeon, le goujon. guilty, coupable. gun, le fusil (l silent). gush, to, jaillir, § 9, b. H.

habit (custom), l'habitude, f., la coutume. haddock, la merluche. hail, to, grêler, p. 22-23. hair, the (collective), les cheveux (le cheveu, a single hair). hall, adj. demi (-e); subst. la moitié. half past . . . , . . . et demi(-e). hand, la main. from - to mouth, p. 148.

survenir. happy, heureux (-se)... hard, adj., dur; (difficult), difficile; adv., fort. it rains hard, *il pleut à vers*e. it freezes -, il gele à pierre fendre. to work -, fam. piocher. hardly, adv., ne ... guere; conj., d peine, ne ... pas plus tôt. harm, le mal. to do -, nuire (à), faire mal (à). haste, la hâte. to make –, se hâter, se dépêcher. hat, le chapeau. hate, to, hair, § 3. have, to (to get), p. 140. to have better, p. 141. to have just, venir de, p. 141. to have rather, aimer mieux, vouloir (in the Condit.) plut. he, il, lui, celui, §§ 25, 28. health, la santé. healthy, sain. hear, to, entendre. hear from, to, avoir (recevoir) des nouvelles de, p. 165. heart, le cœur ; by -, par cœur. heat, *la chaleur*. heavenly, céleste. heaven(s), le ciel, les cieux. heavy, lourd, pesant. heedless, étourdi, inattentif. height, *la hauteur*. help. to, aider, assister. to help to (p. 115), servir. help one's self, to, s'aider; - te something, se servir de gack. Helvetian, l'Helvetien, l'Helvete. her, pers. pron., §§ 25-31. her, hers, poss. pron., § 32. herd, le troupeau. here, ici; - I am, me voici. hero, le héros. hide, to, cacher, céler. hill, la colline, le coteau, la hauteur. him, le, lui, §§ 25–31. high, haut. hold, to, tenir, p. 118,

holiday, jour de congé, m.

holidays, les vacances, f. home, la maison, le chez soi. at -, chez soi, § 31 (5); à la maison. at my -, ches moi, etc. to make one's self at -, ne pas honest, honnête, probe. [se gêner. honey, le miel. hopo, l'espoir, m., l'espérance, f. hopo, to, esperer, § 3, d. horse, le cheval, § 12, IV., c. hot, chaud, § 7, b.  $\mathbf{how}$ , comment. however, adv., quelque, § 36. however, conj., cependant. how long, combien de temps. how many, how much, combien (de). humming-bird, l'oiseau-mouche, m. humour, I humeur, f. hunger, la faim. to be hungry, avoir faim. hunt, to, chasser. hunter, le chasseur. hurry, to be in a, être pressé, avoir hâte (de). in a great –, très pressé.

### I.

hurt, to, faire mal (à).

I, je, moi, §§ 25, 28. idea, l'idée, f. idler, le paresseux, le fainéant. if, si. ill, malade, mal. ill-gotten, mal acquis. ill-will, see p. 126. image, l'image, f. imitate, to, imiter. immediately, immédiatement, aus-.sitôt, sur-le-champ. impatient, impatient. important, important. to be -, (impers.) importer. in, en, dans, p. 174. to be in, être à la maison, y être, . être chez soi. in order that, afin que, p. 94. inattentive, inattentif, étourdi. incapable, incapable. incomparably, incomparablement. increase, to, crostre, § 11, f.

indebted, to be, devoir, p. 121-2. indood, vraiment, en effet. infalliblo, infaillible. infer, to, conclure, p. 147. inform, to, informer, instruire. infringe, to, enfreindre, § 11, a. inhabitant, l'habitant, m. ink, l'encre, f. insect, l'insecte, m. insist, to, *insister*. instant, the, l'instant, m.; adj., courant (in dates). instruct, to, instruire, § 11, b; informer. intelligence, l'intelligence, f. , la nouvelle, l'avis, m., le renseignement. m. intend, to, vouloir, se proposer (de), avoir l'intention (de). interesting, interessant. interference, l'intervention, f. in**v**ade, to, *envahir*. invite, to, inviter (a), prier (de). iron, the, le fer; adj., de fer. to iron, repasser. it, il, ce, §§ 25, 28 ; le, § 28. Italian, italien (-ne). Italy, l'Italie, f.

### J.

James, Jacques.
January, janvier, m.
Japan, le Japon.
jewel, le bijou, § 12, IV., c.
jew's harp, la guimbarde.
John, Jean.
join, to, joindre, rejoindre, p. 132-3.
journey, the, le voyage.
judge, to, juger.
judge, the, le juge.
July, juillet, m.
June, juin, m.
just, juste, to have just . . . , p. 117.
just now, tout à l'heure.

#### K

keep, to, tenir, garder; intrens., se tenir. kid, le chevreau. kill, to, tuer.
kindly, avec bonté, obligeamment.
kindness, l'obligeance, f., la bonté.
king, le roi.
knee, le genou, plur. -x.
knife, le couteau.
knocked up, to be, n'en pouvoir plus.
know, to, connaître, savoir, § 26,
p. 123.
knowledge, les connaissances, f.

L. lady, la dame. ladylike, comme il faut. lake, le lac. land, le pays, la terre. landscape, le paysage. language (tongue), la langue; (any way of conveying one's thoughts, or manner of speaking), le langage. last, dernier, passé. at last, enfin. last night, hier (au) soir. late, tard. to be late, être en retard. to grow late, se faire tard. Latin, latin, la langue latine. laugh, to, rire, § 11, g. to - at, se moquer de. laundress, the, la blanchisseuse. law, la loi. lay, to, poser, mettre; p. 132, asseoir. to lay the blame on, p. 143. lead, to, conduire, § 11, b; mener, § 3, c. learn, to, apprendre, § 11, e. least, the, le (la) moindre. least, at, au moins. leave, to, quitter; - for, partir pour; - out, omettre; - off at, [en rester à. lend, to, prêter. less, moins (de), § 38. lest, de crainte que . . . ne, with Subj., p. 94. let, to, laisser faire, p. 141; Aux. Verb to form the Imperat., pp. 4, 6, 10, 19, 20; (houses, letter, la lettre. [etc.), louer. lie, to, cesir, § 9, c.

life, la vie. lift (up), to, lever. light, to, allumer. light, the, la lumière, le jour. to lighten, pp. 22-23. like, to, aimer, vouloir, trouver à son gout. How do you like . . ? Comment trouvez-vous How do you like Paris? Comment vous plaises-vous à Paris? line, la ligne. [p. 147. linen, le linge. lion, le lion, la lionne. listen (to), to, écouter (with Dir. Obj.) [8 37, C little, adj., petit; adv., peu (de), live, to (to be alive), vivre, § 11, c, ( = to reside), demeurer. [p. 148. long, long, f. longue, § 16. (a) long time, longtemps; for a -, pendant longtemps. long (to), to, tarder d.
I long to, il me tarde de, impers. look (at), to, regarder. look for, to, chercher. looking-glass, le miroir, la glace. lose, to, perdre; (watch), retarder. loud, haut, à haute voix, § 37. love, to, aimer. love, the, l'amour, m. in sing., f. low, bas (-se). [in plur. lower, to, baisser, see also p. 142. luggage, le bagage. lynx, le lynx.

#### M.

Madam, madame.
magnificent, magnifique, superin.
maid-servant, la servante, bonne.
maintain, to, maintenir, soutenir.
majority, la plupart.
make, to, faire; with an adjectivecomplement = rendre.

to make ... meet, joindre . . . to make up, se dédommager, u rattraper.

to make up one's mind, so M soudre (d), prendre som parti; see pp. 143, 148.

malignant, malin, f. maligne. man, l'homme, m. man-of-war, le vaisseau de guerre. manage, to, réussir à. to be able to -, pouvoir. manner, la manière. in a -, d'une manière. many, beaucoup de, bien des, § 37, c. March, mars, m. march, the, la marche. marry, to, se marier, épouser. master, the, le maître; (tutor), l'instituteur, professeur. master thoroughly, to, étudier à fond. masterpiece, le chef-d'œuvre. matter, la matière. to be a - of course, aller sans dire. what is the -? qu'est-ce qu'il y a? what is the - with you! qu'avezmature, mar; (bill), échu. [vous? to be (become) -, échoir. May, mai, m. may, pouvoir, pp. 123-4. me, me, moi, §§ 25-31. meadow, la prairie, le pré. mean, to, vouloir dire, p. 136; signifier. meat, la viande. meet, to, rencontrer.
to make ... meet, joindre, pp. 132-3 men (people), les gens, m. or f. mend, to, raccommoder. merchant, le négociant. merit, le mérite. messenger, le messager. Mexico, le Mexique; (city), Mexico. midst, middle, le milieu. mild, doux, tempéré.
milk, le lait.
milk, to, traire, § 11, c. mill, le moulin; (=factory), l'usine, f., la fabrique, la filature. mind, to, prendre garde, p. 143. minister, le ministre. minute, la minute. mirror, le miroir. mishap, la mésaventure, le contre-Miss, mademoiselle. [temps. miss, to, manquer.

mistake, la faute, l'erreur, f., la méprise. mistaken, to be, se tromper. Monday, lundi, m. money, l'argent, m. month, le mois. moon, la lune. more, the, plus (de). morning, le matin, la matinée. good morning! bonjour! wish you a good -, Je vous souhaite le bonjour! mortal, mortel (-le). most part, most of them, la plupart. mountain, la montagne. mouth, la bouche; (river), l'embouchure, f. move, to, remuer, mouvoir, § 10, a; (intrans.), bouger, se remuer. Mr., monsieur, M. Mrs., madame, Mme. much, beaucoup (de). music, la musique. must, il faut, § 10, a, and p. 127. mutton, le mouton. mutual, mutuel (-le). my, mon, ma, mes, § 32. name, le nom ; by name, de nom. native, natif, natal, indigène.

- country, la patrie, le pays natal. natural, naturel (-le). nature, la nature. naughty, mechant. near, près, près de. [Idioms. nearly, presque; see also p. 116, necessary, necessaire; to be -, il faut, pp. 127-129. necklace, le collier. neglect, to, négliger. neighbour, le voisin, la voisine; in Scriptural sense, le prochain. neither . . . nor, ni . . . ni. nephew, le neveu.

never, ne . . . jamais, p. 14. new, neuf, nouveau, § 16, f.

newspaper, k journal, la gazette.
next, prochain (placed after the

(avoa)

news, la nouvelle.

niece, la mièce.

night, la nuit. no, adj., pas de, point de. no, adv., non. no one, nobody, § 36, c. noise, le bruit. noisy, bruyant. noon, midi, m. north, le nord. north wind, le vent du nord. not, ne . . . pas, ne . . . point. note, le billet, la note. nothing, ne . . . rien, § 36, c. nothing but, ne . . . rien que (de). noun, le nom, le substantif November, novembre, m. now, à présent, maintenant, or. nowhere, nulle part. nurse, la bonne. nut (walnut), la noix; (woodnut), la noisette.

0.

obedient, obéissant. obey, to, obéir  $(\lambda)$ . object, the, l'objet, m. oblige, to, obliger.
obliged, to be, devoir, falloir, p. obtain, to, obtenir. [175. occasion, l'occasion, f. to have - for, p. 141. o'clock, heure(s), f. October, octobre, m. of, de, p. 174. of course, cela va sans dire. of it, en, § 26. off, p. 175. offend, to, offenser. offer, l'offre, f. offer, to, offrir, § 9, b. officer, l'officier. old, âgé, vieux, § 15. how - are you? quel age avezomnibus, l'omnibus, m. [vous? on, sur, p. 175. on account of, à cause de. once, une fois. опе, оп, § 36, с. the one, celui, § 33, d.
one another, l'un l'autre, § 36, b. only, seulement, ne . . . que.

open, to, ouvrir, § 9, b, p. 116. opinion, l'opinion, f., avis, m. opponent, l'adversaire, m. opportunity, Poccasion (de), (l'opportunité, f. = opportuneness). opposite, opposé, vis à vis, en face. or, ou; either...or, ou...ou. orange, l'orange, f. orchard, le verger. order, the, *l'ordre*, m. order, to, *commander*, faire, p. 140. in order to, pour, afin de. orphan, the, l'orphelin(e). Ostend, Ostende. other, autre, § 36, b. ought, devoir, § 10, a, and p. 121. our, notre; ours, le nôtre, § 32. out, out of, p. 175. out, to be, être sorti, en ville. to go -, sortir ; (fire), s'éteindre, over, sur, par-dessus. [p. 132-overcoat, la pardessus, le surtout. [p. 132-3. overcome, to, surmonter, vaincre. overdone (meat), trop cuit(e). overtake, to, rejoindre, § 11, a. owe, to, devoir, p. 121. ox, le bæuf (f silent in plur.). P. pain, la peine, la douleur, la souffrance. pair, la paire. à deux chevaux. palace, le palais. palate, le palais. paper, le papier.

to have a – in . . , avoir mal  $\lambda$  . . . a carriage and pair, une voiture paradise, le paradis. parcel, le paquet. pardon, to, pardonner (à). pardon, the, le pardon. parents, les parents, m. part, la partie. particular, particulier. to be - about, tenir d. partner (in business), l'associé. pass, to, passer (se). passage, le passage.

pasture, tho, he pâturage. pay to, payer. peace, la paix. pear, la poire. peasant, le paysan. pebble, le caillou, § 12, IV., c. pen, la plume. people, les gens, m. and f. per cent., pour cent. perceive, to, apercevoir, s'apercevoir [de. perfect, parfait. perhaps, peut-être. permission, la permission. physician, le médecin. pick up, to, ramasser. picture, le tableau, l'image, f., la peinture (painting). piece, la pièce; (= bit), le morceau. piercing, perçant. pine-apple, l'ananas, m. pine-tree, le pin. pitch, to (trans.), dresser. pity, to, plaindre, p. 132; avoir pitié de. pity, the, la pitié. place, la place. plain, simple. plant, la plante. play, le jeu, le spectacle. play, to, jouer (de with the name of a musical instrument, à with the name of a game). pleasant, agréable, aimable, gracieux; plaisant (placed after the Noun). please, to, plaire (à), § 11, p. 147. pleased, to be, être content, see p. pleasure, le plaisir. plentiful, abondant. plenty of, force (without de). [147. plum, la prune. plunder, to, piller. Plutarch, Piutarque. poacher, la braconnier. poem, poème, m. poet, le poète. point, le point, la pointe. policeman, le gendarme, le sergent de ville. poor, pawore; (meal), maigre.

poorly, indisposé. porous, poreux. port, le port. possess, to, posséder, § 3; avoir. post, to, expédier. postage-stamp, le timbre-poste, § 13, postman, le facteur. post-office, the, la poste. postscript, le postscriptum. potato, la pomme de terre. pound, la livre. power, la puissance, le pouvoir. powerful, puissant. praise, to, louer. prefer, to, preferer, 8 3. preference, la préférence. prepare, to, (se) preparer. press, to, presser. pretend, to, prétendre, feindre, § 11, p. 133; faire le, p. 137. pretty, joli. prevail, to, prévaloir, l'emporter. prevent (from), to, empêcher (de). price, le prix. prince, the, le prince. prisoner, le prisonnier, détenu. prize, le prix. probable, probable. professor, le professeur. promise, to, promettre, § 11, e. promise, the, la promesse. properly, comme il faut. property, le bien; (landed), la propriéte, les terres ; (la propreté, cleanliness). proportion, in, à mesure que. proposal, la proposition. propose, to, proposer. prose, la prose. proverb, le proverbe. provide for, to, pourvoir d, p. 131. provided that, pourou que, with Subj., p. 94. province, la province. prudently, prudemment, avec prupumice-stone, la pierre ponce. punotual (-ly), ponetuel (-lement). punish, to, punir. pupil, l'élève, m. and f. (la pupille, the werd).

pure, pur.
pursue, poursuivre, § II, c.
put, to, mettre, § II, e.
put off, to, differer, § 3.
put on, to, mettre, p. 142.
to - on one's hat, se couvrir.
put... to, to, atteler, § 3.
Pyrenees, les Pyrénées, f.

Q.

quarter, le quart.

a - of an hour, un quart d'heure.
queen, la reine.
queen, la reine.
question, the, la question.
what is the question about? de
quoi s'agit-il?
quick, quickly, vite, prompt, leste.
to be - at answering, être prompt
à la repartie, or, avoir la
repartie prompte, § 37, a (4).
quiet, tranquille, calme.
quite, tout-à-fait, complètement;
as a qualifying adj., tout, très.

#### R.

radish, le radis. railway, le chemin de fer. railway-station, la gare. rain, la pluie. rain, to, pleuvoir, § 10, a. rather (=sooner), plutôt; (somewhat), tant soit peu, quelque to have -, aimer mieux. pen. reach, to, atteindre, parvenir à. read, to, lire, § 11, g. reading, the, la lecture. ready, prêt (a). really, réellement, vraiment. reason, the, la raison. reason, to, raisonner. receive, to, recevoir. reckon, to, compter. recollect, to, se souvenir de, se rappeler. recommend, to, recommander. recognise, to, reconnaître, § 11, f. red, rouge; (hair), roux, -ssa. redouble, to, redoubler-(de).

reduce (to), to, reduire (en), § 11, reflect, to, réfléchir. reflexively, pronominalement. refuse, to, refuser (à). regret, to, regretter, être fache. regular, régulier. rejoice, se réjouir. relate, to, raconter, conter. reliable, sûr, digne de confiance. rely on, to, se fier à, compter sur. remain, to, rester, with être. remarkable, *remarquable*. remember, to, se souvenir de, § 9, b; se rappeler, see also p. 136, render, to, rendre. [Idioms, renounce, to, renoncer à. repeat, to, répéter, § 3; redire, p. [Idioms. 136. repont, to, *se repentis*, § 9, a, p.115. reply, to, répondre (à), répliquer. reply, the, la réponse. reproach with, to, reprocher à qqn. request, to, demander, faire, p. require, to, exiger. 140 resist, to, résister (à). resolve, to, résoudre (de), § 11, h. respect, to, respecter.
return, to (intrans.), retourner; (trans.), rendre. return, the, le retour. by - of post, par retour ds courrier. revive, to (trans.), ramimer; (intrans.), revivre. reward, to, récompenser. rich, riche; (cake, etc.), lourd. ride, to, aller (monter) à cheval. right, to be, *avoir raison*. to think it -, croire devoir. ring, to, sonner. ripe, mar. rise, to (get up), se lever. to take its -, prendre sa source, risk, the, le risque. river, la rivière, le fleuve. read, la route, le chemin. road-side, le bord du chemin. roar, to, bruire, § II, i. roast, rôti. robber, le voleur, brigand.

rock, le roc, rocher, la roche.

Roman, Romain.

roof, le toit.

room, la chambre; (space), la place,
l'espace, m.

rose, la racine.

round, rond.

rose, la ross.

rose-tree, le rosier.

row, to, ramer.

to go for a -, aller en bateau.

rue, to, p. 134.

ruin, to, ruiner.

rule, la règle.

as a -, règle générale.

run, to; courir.

- away, s'enfuir.

- through, to, parcourir.

- away, s'enfuir. - through, to, parcourir. Russia, la Russie. sabre, le sabre. sad, triste. safe, adj., sûr, en sureté. pail, the, la voile. to set -, faire (mettre à la) voile. sailor, le matelot, le marin. salt, le sel. same, même. satisfied (with), satisfait (de), content (de). Saturday, samedi, m. savage, sauvage, farouche, féroce. say, to, dire, § 11, p. 136. scald, to, échauder. school, l'école, f.; at -, à l'-. scissors, les ciseaux, m. sea, la mer. seaside, le bord de la mer. season, to, assaisonner. season, the, la saison. to take a -, s'asseoir. second-hand, d'occasion. secret, le secret. see, to, voir, § 10, b. to - again, revoir. seem, to, sembler, paratire, § II. **sèlse, to,** *saisir*, se saisir de, s'em-' solect, to, choisin

sell, to, vendre. send for, to, envoyer chercher. sense, le sens (s sounded), la signification. sentence (gram.), la phrase, la proposition; (judgment), la sentence. September, septembre, m., § 11,a(1). serious, sérieux. servante. servant, le (la) domestique, la serve, to, servir, § 9, a, p. 115. **set about, to,** p. 143. to - out, partir, § 9, a; se mettre en route. to – sail, mettre à la voile. to - value on, faire cas de. several, plusieurs, m. and f. sewing-machine, la machine à coudre. [brage, f. shade, shadow, l'ombre, f., l'omshall and will, p. 149. sharp, aigu, tranchant. she, elle, §§ 25-31. shed, to, répandre, verser. shell, la coquille. shilling, schelling. shine, to, luire, § 11, briller. shooked, choqué, indigné. shoe, le soulier. short, court, bref. § 15, Obs. 2. should and would, pp. 88, 149. shout, to, crier. show, to, montrer, faire voir, p. 137. shrimp, la crevette. shut, to, fermer (clore, obsol.) sick, malade. sight, la vue, le spectacle. signify, to, signifier, vouloir dire. silent, to be, se taire, § 11, g. silk-worm, le ver à soie. silver, l'argent, m. since, prep., depuis. since, conj., depuis que. since (= 85), puisque. sing, to, chanter. siren, la sirène. sister, la saur. sit (down), to, s'asseoir. situation, ia situation, place. skate, to, patiner. [parer de. | skin, la pease.

sport, le divertissement.

```
sleep, to, dormir, § 9, a.
  sleepy, to be, avoir sommeil.
  slip, to, glisser.
     my foot slipped, le pied m'a
       glissé; j'ai fait un faux pas.
  slow (to), lent d.
      - in, tarder à.
  smell, to, sentir, § 9, a, fleurer.
  smile, to, sourire, § 11, d.
  snow, la neige.
     –, to, neiger, § 3.
  so, adv., si, aussi; (=thus), ainsi.
  so, le, neutral pron., § 28.
  80, conj., si.
  so as to, de manière à, p. 101.
  so many, so much, tant, autant.
  so so, tout doucement.
  so that, pour que, p. 94. society, la société.
  Socrates, Socrate.
  soft, mou, § 15.
  soldier, le soldat.
  solidity, la solidité.
  some, quelques, en, § 28, 111.
  something, quelque chose, m.
  sometimes, quelquefois.
  sometimes . .
                    . sometimes, tantôt
        . . . tantôt.
  soon, bientôt.
     no sooner, ne . . . pas plus tôt, à
  sore, mal.
                                   [ peine.
     to have sore . . , avoir mal \hat{a} . .
  sorrow, le chagrin.
  sorry (for), fâché (de).
soul, l'âme, i.
  source, la source.
to take its -, naître.
  south, le sud.
  South America, l'Amérique du Sud.
  sovereign, le souverain.
  sow, to, semer, § 3, c. Spain, l'Espagne, f.
  Spanish, espagnol, d'Espagne.
  speak, to, parler.
  speak ill, médire, § 11.
  spectacles, les lunettes, f.
  speech, la (les) parole(s), le discours.
 spend, to (money), dépenser.
spend, to (time), passer.
spendthrist, le prodigue, le dissi-
paleur, le bourreau d'argent.
```

```
sprain, to, (se) fouler, (se) donner
      une entorse à.
spread, to, répandre.
to – out, étendre.
 spring (season), le printemps.
 squander, to, gaspiller.
 square, adj., carré (-e).
stairs, l'escalier, m.
stand, to, se tenir debout.
stand out, saillir, § 9, b. stand straight, se tenir droit.
 star, l'étoile, f., l'astre, m.
 start, to (to shudder), tressaillir.
 start, to (to set out), partir.
 station, la station, la gare.
 stay, to, rester, demeurer.
 steamboat, steamer, le bateau à
      vapeur, le vapeur, or steamer
      (pron. stimeur).
steel, l'acier, m.
steel-pen, la plume d'acier, plume
     métallique.
stop, le pas, la démarche.
   carriage -, le marche-pied.
stirrup-leather, des coups d'ari-
      vières.
stone, la pierre, le pavé.
stop, to, (s')arrêter.
story, l'histoire, f., le conte.
strange, étrange.
stranger, étranger, étrangère.
straw, la paille.
strawberry, la fraise.
stray about, to, errer.
street, la rue.
strike, to, frapper, battre; (clock),
      sonner.
strong, fort.
study, to, étudier.
study, the, l'étude, f.
style, le style.
   – of living, la manière de vivre.
subjunctive, le subjonctif.
succeed (in), to, reussir (a).
successful, heureux.
   to be -, réussir.
such a, un tel.
suffer, to, souffrir, § 9, 2.
to – one's sell to be . .
| Buffloo, to, suffere, & II, f.
```

sufficient, adj. suffisant; adv. asses. sugar, le sucre. suit, to, convenir, aller, p. 113. summer, l'été, m. summit, le sommet, le fatte. sun, le soleil. sunrise, le lever du soleil, le soleil levant. Sunday, le dimanche, m. superior, supérieur (-e). suppose, to, supposer. surprise, to, surprendre, étonner. surround, to, se rendre. surround, to, entourer, cerner. suspect, to, soupconner, se douter swallow, l'hirondelle, f. [de. swarm (of bees), l'essaim, m., la foule, la nuée. sweet, doux, § 15. sweeten, to, sucrer. sweets, les bonbons, m. Switzerland, la Suisse.

T.

table, la table. tailor, le tailleur. take, to, prendre, § 11, e. to - up, ramasser. to - a walk, se promener, § 3; faire un tour de promenade. tall, grand, de haute taille. task, le devoir, le pensum. tea, le thé. tea-enp, la tasse à thé, §§ 13-14. teach, enseigner, instruire. tear to pieces, to, dechirer. tear, the, la larme. tell, dire, § 11; (to relate), raconter. term, le terme, la condition. Thames, la Tamise. thank, to, remercier, rendre grâce(s). that (dem. pron.), ce, cela, celui, § 33. that, relat. pron., § 35. that way, par là. the, le, la, les, § 12. theatre, le théâtre, le spectacle. thee, te, toi, §§ 25-31. their, *leur*, § 32; theirs, § 32. them, les; after prep., eux, §\$25-31.

then ( = therefore), donc. then (-at that time), alors. there is, il y a, § 36; voilà. thereupon, sur cela, là-dessus. these, adj., ces; pron., ceux, § 36. they, ils, eux, ceux, §§ 25, 28; (=people), on, § 36. thick, epais (-se). thing, la chose. think, to, penser, songer (a); (=tobelieve), croire. to - better of it, se raviser. thirst, la soif. thirsty, to be, avoir soif. this, ce, cet, cette, celui-ci, ceci, § 33. this way, par ici. thistle, le chardon. thoroughly, à fond. though, conj., quoique; interj., vraiment! thread, le fil. threaten, to, menacer. three, *trois*. throne, le trône. through, par, à travers, au travers de, p. 176. throw away, to, jeter, § 3. thunder, to, tonner. thunder, the, le tonnerre.
- storm, l'orage, m. Thursday, jeudi, m. tight, étroit, juste. till, prep., jusqu'à, p. 176; conj., jusqu'à ce que, p. 194. time, le temps. time(s) (multiplication), la fois, § 23. tired, fatigué, las, f. lasse. to, à, en, p. 176. to-day, aujourd'hui. together, ensemble. to-morrow, demain. too, trop. too much, too many, trop (de). touch, to, toucher (a). towards, vers, envers, p. 176. town, la ville. town-hall, l'hôtel de ville, m. train, le train, le convoi. translate, to, traduire, 8 11, b. translation, la traduction, la version.

Trasimenus, Trasimene. travel, to, voyager. to - from ... to .. , aller de ... d ... travel, the, le voyage. traveller, le voyageur. tread, marcher. treasure, le trésor. treat, to, traiter. tree, l'arbre, m. tremble (with), to, trembler (de). tribe, la tribu, la peuplade. trouble, la peine, le souci. truant, to play the, faire l'école buissonnière. true, vrai, véritable. trusty, fidèle, éprouvé. truth, la vérité. Tuesday, mardi, m. tulip, la tulipe. turf, le gazon. turn, to, tourner. turn (to), to, retourner. to - to account, mettre à profit. turn, the, le tour. it is your -, c'est à vous à . . try, to, essayer (de), § 3; tâcher (de). twelve, douze. twelve o'clock (noon), midi, m.;

(midnight), minuit, f.

under, sous, p. 176. underdone (meat), saignant. underline, to, souligner. understand, to, comprendre, § 11, e; entendre. undertake, to, entreprendre. undertaking, l'entreprise, f. unfortunate, infortuné, malheureux. unfortunately, malheureusement. ungrateful, ingrat. unless, à moins que . . . ne, p. 94. until, conj., jusqu'à ce que; prep., jusqu'à. unworthy, indigne. upon, sur, p. 175. upstairs, en haut; see also p. 139. . to come (go) -, monter. us, nous, §§ 25-31.

use, the, l'emploi, m., l'usage, m.; (=custom, l'usage). to make - of, se servir de. use, to, employer, § 3; se servir de; see also Caution, p. 81. useful, utile. useless, inutile, en vain. usurer, l'usurier.

vain, in, en vain. to be in - for . . . , avoir beas. value, the, la valeur. to set - on, faire cas de. **vanity**, *la vanité.* veal, *le veau*. Venice, *Venise*. verb, le verbe. verse, le vers. very, très, bien, fort. very much, fort, beaucoup (never très beaucoup), infiniment. vessel, le vaisseau. victory, la victoire. view, la vue, l'aspect, m. vinegar, le vinaigre. violin, *le violon*. visit, la visite, p. 137. voice, la voix. volume, *le volume*.

W. wait (for), to, attendre. waiting-room, la salle d'attente. walk, the, la promenade, le tour de promenade. walk, to, marcher, se promener, cheminer. wall, le mur; (of a room), la paroi. want, le besoin, le manque. want, to, falloir, p. 127; vouloir, p. 125; désirer; (= to be in need of), avoir besoin de. war, la guerre. warm, to be, (pers.) avoir chand; (impers.) faire chand.

warn, to, avertir.
wash, to, laver, blanchir.
wash (time-keeper), la montre.

water, l'eau, f. water, to (plants), arroser; (beasts), abreuver. wave, the, la vague, la lame. way, le chemin. which way? par où? this way, parici; that -, parlà. We, nous, §§ 25-31. weak, faible. wealth, la richesse, les richesses. wealthy, riche, opulent. weather, le temps, la température. Wednesday, mercredi, m. week, la semaine. to-day week, dans huit jours. welcome, le (la) bienvenu (-e), plur. les bienvenu-s (-es). well, bien; interj., eh bien! west, Pouest, m., Poccident, m. western, occidental, de l'ouest. what, relat. pron., que, quoi, § 35; interrog. pron., § 34. whatever, quoique, quelque, § 36. when, quand? lorsque. whenever, toutes les fois que, chaque fois que. where, où. whether, si. whether . . . or, que . . . ou. which, qui, que, quel, §§ 34-35. while, whilst, pendant que, tandis white, blanc, § 16, d. **who**, qui, lequel, §§ 34-35. whoever, quiconque, § 36. whole, the, tout le, toute la; le ... entier, la . . . entière. why? pourquoi? why ... not ... ! que ne ...? why! interj., mais! wicked, méchant. wild, sauvage. will, vouloir. will and shall, p. 149. will, the, la volonté. ill-will, p. 126. willing, to be, vouloir. willingly, volontiers. your, yours, § 32.

win, to, gagner, obtenir, acquérir. wind, the, le vent. window, la fenêtre, la croisée. carriage-window, la glace. wine, le vin. wine-glass, le verre à vin, § 14, d. winter, l'hiver, m. wise, sage. wish, to, (1) = to desire, désirer, vouloir; (2) greeting, souhaiter, p. 126. to wish well, p. 126. with, avec, de, p. 177. withdraw, se retirer without, sans, with Infinit. wolf, le loup, f. la louve. word, le mot, la parole. work, le travail, l'ouvrage, m. works of an author, œuvres, f. work, to, travailler. world, le monde, l'univers, m. worse, adj. pire, plus mauvais; adv. pis, le plus mal, § 38. so much the -, tant pis. worst, le pire, le plus mal, § 38. worth, the, la valeur. worth, to be, valoir, p. 131. would and should, p. 149. write, to, écrire, § 11, d. wrong, to be, avoir tort. to do -, p. 139. yard, le yard.

(10 yards = 9 mètres). year, l'an, m.; l'année, f. yellow, jaune. yes, oui, que oui (si in answer toa negative question). yesterday, hier. yet, adv., encore. not yet, pas encore. yet, conj., cependant. yonder, là-bas. young, jeune.

you, vous, §§ 25, 28.

CHARLES DICKENS AND EVANS, CRYSTAL PALACE PRESS.

# WORKS BY G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT,

## ASSISTANT-MASTER IN WESTMINSTER SCHOOL.

- MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE. By G. Eugène Fasnacht.
  - I.—FIRST YEAR, containing Easy Lessons on the Regular Accidence. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 1s.
  - II.—SECOND YEAR, containing an Elementary Grammar, with Copious Exercises, Notes, and Vocabularies. 11. 6d.
  - III.—THIRD YEAR, containing a Systematic Syntax, and Lessons in Composition. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.
- THE TEACHER'S COMPANION TO MACMILLAN'S PRO-GRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE. Third Year. With Copious Notes, Hints for Different Renderings, Synonyms, Philological Remarks, &c. By G. E. FASNACHT. Globe 8vo. 4s. 6d.
- MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH READERS. By G. EUGENE FASNACHT.
  - I.—FIRST YEAR, containing Fables, Historical Extracts, Letters, Dialogues, Ballads, Nursery Songs, &c., with two Vocabularies: (1) in the order of subjects; (2) in alphabetical order. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.
  - II.—SECOND YEAR, containing Fiction in Prose and Verse, Historical and Descriptive Extracts, Essays, Letters, Dialogues, &c. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.
- A SYNTHETIC FRENCH GRAMMAR FOR SCHOOLS. By the same Author. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.
- GRAMMAR AND GLOSSARY OF THE FRENCH LAN-GUAGE OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. By the same Author. [In the press.
- THE ORGANIC METHOD OF STUDYING LANGUAGES.

  By the same Author. Extra Fcap. 8vo. I. French. 3s. 6d.

# WORKS BY G. EUGENE FASNACHT,

ASSISTANT-MASTER IN WESTMINSTER SCHOOL.

- MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE GERMAN COURSE. By G. EUGENE FASNACHT.
  - Part I.—First Year. Easy Lessons and Rules on the Regular Accidence. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.
  - Part II.—SECOND YEAR. Conversational Lessons in Systematic Accidence and Elementary Syntax. With Philological Illustrations and Etymological Vocabulary. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 2s.
  - \* \* Keys to the French and German Courses are in preparation.
- MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE GERMAN READERS. By G. EUGENE FASNACHT. [In preparation.
- A COMPENDIOUS DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE (French-English and English-French). Adapted from the Dictionaries of Professor Alfred Elwall. Followed by a List of the Principal Diverging Derivations, and preceded by Chronological and Historical Tables. By GUSTAVE MASSON, Assistant Master and Librarian, Harrow School. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.
- FIRST LESSONS IN FRENCH. By H. COURTHORPE BOWEN, M.A., Principal of the Finsbury Training College for Higher and Middle Schools. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 1s.
- Works by W. D. WHITNEY, Professor of Sanskrit and Instructor in Modern Languages in Yale College.
- A COMPENDIOUS GERMAN GRAMMAR. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d.
- A GERMAN READER, IN PROSE AND VERSE. With Notes and Vocabulary. Crown 8vo. 5s.
- A COMPENDIOUS GERMAN AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY, with Notation of Correspondences and Brief Etymologies. By Professor W. D. Whitney, assisted by A. H. Edgren. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.
  - THE GERMAN-ENGLISH PART, separately, 5s.

# **MACMILLAN'S**

# PRIMARY SERIES

OF

# FRENCH AND GERMAN READING BOOKS.

Globe 8vo. Illustrated.

# EDITED BY G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT,

ASSISTANT-MASTER IN WESTMINSTER SCHOOL.

This Series of easy Reading Books in French and German is intended for the use of beginners. The subjects will be carefully selected from books thoroughly suitable, and at the same time attractive, to young students, whether in schools or at home.

Each volume will contain an Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, and will be printed in clear, readable type. A few appropriate illustrations will, it is hoped, form an additional attraction.

The fact that the Series will be under the direction of M. EUGÈNE FASNACHT, whose long experience as a practical teacher has led him to believe that it will meet a distinct and widely-felt want, is sufficient guarantee for the sound scholarship of the Notes, and their fitness for actual needs. The following volumes are now in preparation, and others will be announced in due course.

- PERRAULT—CONTES DES FÉES. Edited, with Illustrations, Notes, and Vocabulary, by G. E. FASNACHT. [In the press.
- LA FONTAINE—SELECT FABLES. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by L. M. MORIARTY, M.A., Assistant-Master at Rossall. [In preparation.
- GRIMM—MAUSMARCHEN. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by G. E. FASNACHT. [In preparation.
- G. SCHWAB—ODYSSEUS. With Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary, by the same Editor. [In preparation.

# FOREIGN SCHOOL CLASSICS.

EDITED BY G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT.

### FRENCH.

- CORNEILLE—LE CID. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. 15.
  DUMAS—LES DEMOISELLES DE ST. CYR. Edited by VICTOR
- OGER, Lecturer in University College, Liverpool. [In preparation. MOLIÈRE—LES FEMMES SAVANTES. By G. E. FASNACHT. 15.
- MOLIÈRE-LE MISANTHROPE. By the same Editor. 1s.
- MOLIÈRE LE MÉDECIN MALGRÉ LUI. Bythesame Editor. Is.
- MOLIERE—L'AVARE. Edited by L. M. MORIARTY, B.A., Assistant Master at Rossall. 15.
- MOLIÈRE—LE BOURGEOIS GENTILHOMME. By the same Editor.
- RACINE—BRITANNICUS. Edited by EUGENE PELLISSIER,
  Assistant Master in Clifton College, and Lecturer at University
  College, Bristol. [In preparation.
- SCENES IN ROMAN HISTORY. Selected from French Historians and edited by C. Colbeck, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Camb.; Assistant Master at Harrow. [In preparation.
- SAND, GEORGE—LA MARE AU DIABLE. Edited by W. E. RUSSELL, M.A., Assistant Master in Haileybury College. 15.
- SANDEAU, JULES-MADEMOISELLE DE LA SEIGLIÈRE. Edited by H. C. STEEL, Assistant Master in Wellington College.
- VOLTAIRE—CHARLES XII. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT.

  [In the press.

### GERMAN.

- GOETHE—GÖTZ VON BERLICHINGEN. Edited by H. A. Bull, M.A., Assistant Master at Wellington. 2s.
- GOETHE—FAUST. PART I. Edited by JANE LEE, Lecturer in Modern Languages at Newnham College, Cambridge.

  [In preparation.
- HEINE—SELECTIONS FROM THE REISEBILDER AND OTHER PROSE WORKS. Edited by C. COLBECK, M.A., Assistant Master at Harrow, late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 2s. 6d.
- SCHILLER—DIE JUNGFRAU VON ORLEANS. Edited by JOSEPH GOSTWICK. 2s. 6d.
- SCHILLER-MARIA STUART. Edited by C. SHELDON, M.A., D.Lit., Assistant Master in Clifton College. 21, 6d.
- SCHILLER-WILHELM TELL. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT.
- UHLAND—SELECT BALLADS. With Vocabulary. Adapted as a First Easy Reading Book for Beginners. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. 1s.





